THE GIFT OF
WILLIAM G. KERCKHOFF
TO THE
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA
AT LOS ANGELES

EX LIBRIS

THE LIBRARY OF
FRIEDRICH KLUGE
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON

BY

MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.
Professor of English in the University of Texas


Baltimore
The Modern Language Association of America
1901
THE
APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE
IN
ANGLO-SAXON

BY

MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.
PROFESSOR OF ENGLISH IN THE UNIVERSITY OF TEXAS


BALTIMORE
THE MODERN LANGUAGE ASSOCIATION OF AMERICA
1901
# CONTENTS

**INTRODUCTION** .......................................................... 141
I. The Dual Nature of the Participle; Definitions .................. 141
II. The History of the Term Appositive Participle ................. 144
III. The Relative Age of the Several Uses of the Participle ....... 149
IV. The Inflection and the Position of the Appositive Participle .. 150

**Chapter I. Statistics of the Appositive Participle in Anglo-Saxon** .................................................. 154
I. In the Prose Works ...................................................... 155
II. In the Poems ........................................................... 234
III. Synoptic Table ......................................................... 266

**Chapter II. Uses of the Appositive Participle in Anglo-Saxon** .................................................. 268
I. The Adjectival Use ....................................................... 270
II. The Adverbial Use ....................................................... 273
   1. Modal ............................................................... 274
   2. Temporal ............................................................ 278
   3. Causal .............................................................. 279
   4. Final ............................................................... 280
   5. Concessive .......................................................... 282
   6. Conditional ........................................................ 284
III. The Co-ordinate Use .................................................. 285
   1. The "Circumstantial" Participle ................................ 286
   2. The "Iterating" Participle ........................................ 287
   3. Notes ............................................................... 289
IV. Summary of Uses ....................................................... 292

**Chapter III. Origin of the Appositive Participle in Anglo-Saxon** .................................................. 297
I. The Adjectival Use ....................................................... 298
II. The Adverbial Use ....................................................... 300
   1. Modal ............................................................... 300
   2. Temporal ............................................................ 301
CONTENTS.

3. Causal........................................................................................................ 302
4. Final........................................................................................................... 304
5. Concessive.................................................................................................. 304
6. Conditional............................................................................................... 305

III. The Co-ordinate Use.............................................................. 306

IV. The Governing Power of the Participle.......................... 307
   1. The Present Participle................................................................. 307
   2. The Preterite Participle.............................................................. 313

V. Table of Latin Correspondences.............................................. 315

Chapter IV. The Anglo-Saxon Rendering of the Latin Appositive Participle ......................................................... 321
   1. By a Co-ordinated Finite Verb....................................................... 321
   II. By a Subordinated Finite Verb...................................................... 323
   III. By a Prepositional Phrase............................................................ 325
   IV. By a Verb in the Infinitive Mood............................................... 327
   V. By an Attributive Participle............................................................ 328
   VI. By an Absolute Participle............................................................. 328
   VII. By an Adverb.............................................................................. 328
   VIII. By an Adjective....................................................................... 328
   IX. By a Substantive........................................................................ 329

Chapter V. The Appositive Participle in the Other Germanic Languages................................................................. 330
   I. Uses.................................................................................................... 330
      1. In Gothic.................................................................................. 330
      2. In the Scandinavian Languages............................................. 332
      3. In High German..................................................................... 334
      4. In Old Saxon.......................................................................... 338
   II. Origin................................................................................................ 339
   III. Rendering of Greek and Latin Appositive Participle.............. 341

Chapter VI. The Anglo-Saxon Appositive Participle as a Norm of Style................................................................. 344

Chapter VII. Results................................................................. 348

Additions and Corrections.............................................................. 358

Bibliography................................................................................. 355
VIII.—THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO- SAXON.

INTRODUCTION.

I.

The twofold nature of the participle is sufficiently attested by the fact that it is universally defined as a verbal adjective. The genesis of this twofold nature has been interestingly discussed by Brugmann (I. F., v, 88 ff.; Gr. Gr. 3 §§ 479 f.) and by Delbrück (ii, p. 477). Mine is the humbler task of pointing out the various manifestations of this dual nature as exemplified in the appositive use of the participle in Anglo-Saxon; to which is appended a brief survey of the same phenomena in the other Germanic languages. This is by no means an easy task, since the same participle may be dominantly adjectival in one sentence, prevailingly verbal in another, and equally divided between the two in a third. Of course, too, a participle may be used as a noun; but in such case it ceases to be a participle; hence in this paper no account is taken of the substantivized participle. However, certain adverbial uses of the participle are treated.

The difficulty of our problem is further aggravated by the diversity of meaning attached to the same term by different
grammarians. At the outset, therefore, it is necessary to define the terms used in this monograph. The study is based upon a twofold classification of the participle: (I) According to the nature of the participle; (II) According to the relationship of the participle to its subject (or principal).

According to its nature, a participle is (1) verbal when the assertive force is dominant, and (2) adjectival when the descriptive force is dominant; as a rule, the verbal participle denotes an act in the widest sense, while the adjectival denotes a state. These terms, of course, are relative only, and under different collocations each is equally applicable to the same word. Thus, in the phrase, *the shining sun*, *shining* is adjectival, if not an adjective; while in the sentence, *The sun, shining through the trees, lighted our path*, the participle is verbal. But, despite this relativity, the distinction is of great importance; and it is possible to mark off certain more or less stable groups. The preterite participle, for instance, is more adjectival than the present; as the present participle with an object is more verbal than one without an object. Occasionally, too, a participle is so constantly used adjectivally that it becomes an adjective proper, as in the case of the Latin *sanctus*, the A.-S. *cwS*, etc. The completely adjectivized participle is not treated in this monograph.

According to its relationship to its principal, a participle is (A) independent (or absolute) when its subject is grammatically independent of the rest of the sentence, and (B) dependent (or conjoint) when its subject is not grammatically independent of the rest of the sentence, but is intimately bound up therewith. Examples are:—(A): *Bede*¹ 284. 20: *swa eallum gesceondum upp in heofonas gewal* = *Bede*² 220. 11: *sic uidentibus cunctis ad alta subduxit* (see my Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 5 ff.);—(B): *Luke* 4. 40: *he syndryyum hys hand onsettende hig gehcelde* = *ille singulis manus imponens curabat eos*. The dependent (or conjoint) participle may be subdivided into (1) predicative (or supplementary, cf. Goodwin, *Moods and Tenses*, § 877), when the participle is joined to its
subject by means of a verb; (2) non-predicative (or assumptive, cf. Sweet, § 44), when not joined to its subject by the instrumentality of a verb. The predicative participle may be subdivided into (a) predicate nominative and (b) predicate accusative; the non-predicative (or assumptive), into (a) attributive, when the connection between the participle and its principal is so close that the two constitute one indivisible idea, and (b) appositive, when the connection between the participle and its principal is so loose that the two seem to constitute two independent ideas; or, to use the words of Sweet (§ 90): "When the subordination of an assumptive (attributive) word to its head-word is so slight that the two are almost co-ordinate, the adjunct-word is said to be in apposition to its head-word." A few examples will suffice for illustration:—(1) Predicative (or Supplementary): (a) Predicate Nominative: Elene 492: Stephanus wes stanum worpod;—ib. 486: Do §riddan dwg lifyende aras, etc.;—(b) Predicate Accusative: Luke 22. 56: Da hine geseah sum ðinen at leohne sitende = quem cum vidisset ancilla quaedam sedentem ad lumen;—Bl. Hom. 218. 7: Da mette he ðane man forðereðne, etc.;—(2) Non-predicative (or Assumptive): (a) Attributive: Beoio. 741: he gefeng hrade forman side skæpendne vine;—ib. 581: Da mec sce oðber . . . wudu weal-lendu;—ib. 1245: ðær on bence wes . . . yðgesene . . . hringed byrne;—ib. 216: guman ut scefon . . . wudu bundenne, etc.;—(b) Appositive: Mat. 9. 12: se Hælend cwæð, ðis gehyrende = At Jesus audiens, ait;—Luke 1. 74: ðat we butan ege of ure feonda handa alysede him Seowian = Ut sine timore, de manu . . . liberati, serviamus illi;—Mat. 8. 9: SoSlice ic com man under anwealde gesett = Nam et ego homo sum sub potestate constitutas;—Ælfr. Hom. 1, 62a: Johannes bescah to heofonum, ðus cwæðende, etc.

No originality is claimed for the above classification; for, although I have not found the system as a whole in any treatise, almost every one of the terms is substantially so used in one or more standard works. Nor is the system
looked upon as ideal; it is given merely because it seems a fair working scheme for this monograph. But, while I believe that all my terms are clear as above defined and exemplified, the word appositive demands more extended treatment, since it gives the title to this paper.

II.

Remoteness from the larger libraries precludes my giving a complete history of the phrase appositive participle; and I must content myself with a brief statement concerning the more important grammatical treatises that have been accessible to me. Fortunately, as a reference to the bibliography will show, I have been able to consult all the most significant monographs (old as well as new) on the participle in Anglo-Saxon and in the other Teutonic tongues.

The phrase appositive participle is not used as a distinct category by Grimm, Becker, Mätzner, Koch, March, Sweet, or Delbrück among the Germanic grammarians, or by Classen, Draeger, Gildersleeve, or Goodwin among the classicists. The locution seems to have been habitually used first by Krüger and Curtius in their Greek grammars, by Madvig in his Latin grammar, by Gabelentz and Löbe in their Gothic grammar, and by Vernaleken in his Deutsche Syntax; and its present currency is perhaps largely due to the wide popularity of these works, especially the first three.

By the grammarians who regularly make use of the phrase, two distinct definitions have been given. The one set restricts the term appositive to the participle that is equal to a dependent adverbial (conjunctive) clause, while the other extends it also to the participle that is equivalent to a dependent adjectival (relative) clause. Judged by their definitions, Krüger and Curtius originally sided with the former. Krüger's state-

1 In his Greek grammar of 1829 (pp. 469, 474), however, Bernhardy has a few words concerning the appositive use of the participle.
ment is as follows (p. 215 1): "Die appositive Participial-construction und ihr zur Seite gehend die absolute sind eine unklarere Ausdrucksweise für Sätze die mit dem Hauptsatze in einem temporalen oder realen Verhältnisse stehen." Examples are cited of the appositive participle in (1) temporal, (2) conditional, (3) causal, and (4) concessive clauses, but not in adjectival (relative) clauses, though under the head of temporal uses (p. 217, 10, Anmuk. 1) this remark is made: "In vielen Fällen übersetzen wir die Participia durch das Relativ oder durch Conjunctionen." To the same effect is the definition of Curtius (§ 579 2): "Das Particip dient dazu, einem Substantiv etwas als eine nur vorübergehende Eigenschaft oder Thätigkeit beizulegen. In diesem Falle ist das Particip eine kurze und unbestimmtere Ausdrucksweise für das, was sonst durch Nebensätze mit Conjunctionen der verschiedensten Art ausgedrückt wird." In the following sections (580–583) he gives examples of the appositive participle in (1) temporal, (2) causal and final, (3) concessive, and (4) conditional clauses; adding this note 3: "Bei dem mannichfaltigen Gebrauch der appositiven Participien ist nicht zu übersehen, dass ein solches Particip an sich keine der in §§ 580–583 entwickelten Bedeutungen deutlich ausdrückt, dass wir vielmehr nur zur Übersetzung uns der einen oder der andern Wendung bedienen, um dasselbe in schärferer Weise auszusprechen, was durch das Particip nur angedeutet

1 I quote from the fifth edition of his *Attische Syntax* (Leipzig, 1873), but the same statement, I have been informed, occurs in the first edition (Leipzig, 1843).

2 I quote from the ninth edition (Prag, 1870), but substantially the same statement is made in the first edition (Prag, 1852). And in the chapter on the Participle in his *Erläuterungen* 3 (p. 203) Curtius thus acknowledges his indebtedness to Krüger: "In der Gliederung dieser Gebrauchsweisen bin ich wesentlich K. W. Krüger folgt, ohne jedoch in der Reihenfolge mich ihm anzuschliessen."—My quotation is from the third edition of the *Erläuterungen* (1875), but it does not differ essentially from the statement of the first edition (1863).

3 This note is not in the first edition of the grammar.
ist.” Gering specifically restricts the appositive participle to adverbial clauses (p. 393): “Während das attributive participe bestimmend und erklärend zu dem nomen tritt, dient das appositive dazu, gewisse adverbialle nebenbestimmungen der handlung auszudrücken. Es bezeichnet daher, in welcher zeit, aus welchem grunde, in welcher absicht, unter welchen bedingungen oder einschränkungen, durch welche mittel, auf welche art und weise eine person oder ein gegenstand etwas ausführte oder erlitt. Characteristisch für das appositive participe ist es, dass es nie den artikel bei sich hat.” The same restriction is made by Karl Köhler and by Kühn, though the latter does not use the term appositive, but speaks of the use of the participle “in eigentlicher participialer Funktion in Vertretung eines Adverbialsatzes.”

But, despite the high standing of Krüger, Curtius, and Gering, the restriction of the appositive participle to adverbial uses seems unwise. Indeed, it may be doubted whether Curtius intended so to limit the term by the definition above quoted; if so, he afterwards changed his mind, for in his Erklärungen³ (p. 203) he gives a definition of the appositive participle that includes its use in adjectival (relative) as well as in adverbial (conjunctive) clauses: “Der ‘appositive Gebrauch’ schliesst sich an die § 361, 12 gegebene Definition der Apposition an. Wie ich unter Apposition einer Zusatz loserer Art verstehe, welcher in der Regel synonym mit einem beschreibenden Zwischen—or Nebensatz ist, so entsprechen die appositiven Participien als kürzere, losere und deshalb auch weniger bestimmte Ausdrucksweisen wesentlich demselben Zwecke, der in festerer Weise durch relative⁴ und Conjunctionssätze erreicht wird.” The remainder of his comment, though not on this point, is too instructive to omit: “Classen in seinen oben (S. 173) erwähnten Beobachtungen über den homerischen Sprachgebrauch nennt den von mir appositiv genannten Gebrauch

¹The italics are mine.
prädicativ. Ich verkenne nicht, dass sich auch diese Bezeichnung rechtfertigen lässt, insofern als das appositive Particiap, unterschieden vom attributiven, allerdings eine aussagende, prädizierende Kraft besitzt, die am entschiedensten in den absoluten Participialconstructionen hervortritt. Allein es scheint mir doch gerathener, den Ausdruck prädicatives Particiap mit Krüger auf denjenigen Gebrauch zu beschränken, bei welchem das Particiap zur Ergänzung eines verbalen Prädicats dient (§ 589 bis 594) und als solches einen wesentlichen Theil der Aussage bildet.” Vernaleken leaves no doubt as to his position (p. 502): “Das partizip welches dazu dient einem substantiv etwas als eine nur vorübergehende eigenschaft oder thätigkeit beizulegen, also appositionell steht, und so eine kürzere ausdrucksweise ist für das, was sonst durch neben-sätze mit bindewörtern oder dem relativ ausgedrückt wird, findet sich,” etc.; which definition clearly includes adjective (relative) as well as adverbial (conjunctive) clauses. With this O. Erdmann substantially agrees; for, while he does not use the phrase appositive participle, it is clear that his selbständiges Particiapium of the following quotation corresponds to Vernaleken’s appositive participle (Syntax d. Spr. Otfrids, p. 214): “Die verbale Natur des Particiapiums tritt nicht immer in gleichem Masse hervor. Ich suche bei einem jeden der beiden Participia, welche die ahd. Sprache besitzt, die Belege mit Rücksicht hierauf zu ordnen, und unterscheide drei Abschnitte, je nachdem das Particiapium eine selbständige, von der Handlung des Hauptsatzes unterschiedene Tätigkeit aussagt, oder prädicativ mit dem Verbum zu dem Begriffe einer einzigen Tätigkeit verschmilzt, oder endlich attributiv wie ein Adj. gebräucht wird um eine dem Gegenstande, auf welchen es sich bezieht, stetig inwohnende Eigenschaft zu bezeichnen.” In his examples Erdmann cites participles that represent adjectival as well as adverbial clauses; as does Mourek, who (p. 33) speaks of the participle “in selbständiger, prädicativer, satzvertretender apposition.” With the exception of K. Köhler and of Kühn, who, as already stated,
restrict the appositive participle to adverbial clauses, all the writers on Old English Syntax named in the bibliography include under the appositive use of the participle adjectival as well as adverbial clauses. Some (Conradi, Einenkel, Flamme, Höser, Kempf, Mohrbutter, Schürmann, Wülfling) use the phrase appositive participle; others (Furkert, Hertel, Planer, Reussner, Seyfarth, Spaeth, Wohlfahrt) speak of the "eigentliches Participium zur Abkürzung eines Satzes" (Wohlfahrt, p. 39); and others (Koch, Mätzner, March, Sweet) have no specific designation for the construction.

Another apparently divergent interpretation calls for brief mention. The standard New High German grammars of Brandt, von Jagemann, Thomas, and Whitney regularly use the expression appositive participle to indicate, in the words of Thomas, "an appositional predicate, which denotes a concomitant act or state;" but "such a participle or participial phrase is," according to Whitney (§ 357), "used only in the sense of an adjective clause, and expresses ordinarily an accompanying circumstance, or describes a state or condition; it may not be used, as in English, to signify a determining cause, or otherwise adverbially." But, as a following note by Whitney and some examples cited by Thomas show, this statement is somewhat too strong, for in New High German an appositive participle is occasionally used in place of a dependent adverbial clause. Moreover, in making the above remark, Whitney intended to acquaint his reader with New High German usage and not to give a general definition of a grammatical term.

To sum up the matter: by a number of eminent grammarians the phrase appositive participle is not used as a distinct category; by others equally eminent it is habitually used, but in different senses. Of the latter some restrict

1 Except the older grammarians (Hickes, Lye, and Manning), who do not treat the construction of the appositive participle.

2 Wülfling's treatment of the Appositive Participle has not appeared as yet.
the appositive use to the participle that is equivalent to an adverbial clause, while others make it include adjectival as well as adverbial clauses. The latter usage, though not universal, is becoming general, especially with students of Germanic grammar.

To me the general introduction of this term into our textbooks seems highly desirable, since it would extend to the use of the participle what the student had already learned with reference to the noun. As the statistics show, I include under appositive the participle that is equivalent to an adjectival clause as well as that which is equal to an adverbial clause. The uses of the adverbial appositive participle correspond closely to those of the subordinate adverbial clause, but are so varied as to call for treatment in a separate chapter (ii.).

III.

The appositive use of the participle is common to the Indo-Germanic languages, but by no means equally common. Greek leads the others, and Latin is far in advance of the Germanic languages. An instructive general treatment of the subject is given by Jolly in his Zur Lehre vom Particip and by Delbrück in his Syntax. To the works named by Delbrück I may add those of Bolling, Fay, Helm, Köberlin, Milroy, and Tamnelin, which throw no little light on the appositive participle in Latin and in Greek. Of works on the appositive participle in the Germanic languages exclusive of English a brief account is given in Chapter v.

In the article just referred to, Jolly maintains that the attributive use of the participle preceded the appositive, and that the appositive preceded the predicative, which latter he considers a younger variation of the appositive. In Anglo-Saxon it is probable, I think, that the attributive use preceded the appositive, the latter growing out of the former when thrust into post-position, either because the noun had several participles modifying it at once or because the participle was itself
modified (see section iv., below). The appositive use of the adjectival participle may have preceded the predicative use of the participle; for the appositive adjectival participle is common in Anglo-Saxon poetry, while, as Pessels (p. 49) has shown, the predicative participle of the progressive tenses is very rare in Anglo-Saxon poetry, though common in the prose. But the appositive use of the verbal participle, at least of the participle governing a direct object, is most probably of later development in English than the predicative use of the present participle; since the progressive tenses are very common in the works of Alfred (nearly 600 exs., according to Pessels, p. 51), while the appositive participle with a direct object is practically unknown to him (only 18 exs., of which 17 are in direct translation of a Latin appositive participle), and does not become frequent until the time of Elfric (see Statistics). But we must turn from these speculative questions to matters about which a reasonable degree of certainty is possible.

IV.

In Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle occurs by far most frequently in the nominative case, as is true also in Lithuanian (Delbrück, p. 490) and in Old High German (Mourek). For the representation of the several cases in Anglo-Saxon see the statistics.

The inflexion of the appositive participle is as follows:—

(1) Present:—The nominative singular of all genders has -ende, with these exceptions: -end occurs three times in the masculine (Boeth. 8. 5, Elfr. L. S. 282. 5, Elfr. H.pt. (Judges) 4. 22), and once in the feminine (Bede 72. 3); by confusion of inflected infinitive with participle, Brun has -enne for -ende four times (95. 11, 114. 10, 61. 7, all masc.; 98. 6, fem.), -un for -und once (29. 11, masc.), and -endre for -ende once (16. 9); Boeth. 73. 22 has -inde, m. The GSMN. has
-endes except once, in Benet (109. 2: seegende). The GSF. is -endre except once, in Ælfric (L. S. xxiii. B. 426: seeende). The DSMN. is usually -endum (20 exs.), but is -ende occasionally (7 exs.: 1 in Ælfred, 1 in Benedict, 5 in Ælfric), and -endan, weak, once (Luke 6. 49). The DSF. is -endre normally (4 exs.), rarely -ende (1 ex.: Ælfric). The ASM. is -endne 21 times,1 but -ende 28 times (Ælfred 3, Ælfric 8, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 5, Gospels 6, Poems 6). The ASF. is invariably -ende. The ASN. is -ende except once (Chron. 656 E: eænd). The N. and APMFN. is -ende except twice in Benet (21. 7: becumene for becumende, apm.; 26. 14: stirienda, apn.). The GP. is -endra (14 exs.) except twice in Benet (69. 1: etenda, 78. 12: utgangendre). The DP. is -endum (30 exs.) except twice (Ælfr. de v. et n. Test. 5. 34: farende; A.-S. Hom. & L. of S. i, 7. 151: ib.).

(2) Preterite:—The NSMN. is -ed (-od,2 -ad2; -t,3) for weak and -en for strong verbs. The NSF. is regularly uninflected (64 exs.), being -ed for strong and -en for weak verbs; except twice in Ælfric (Hom. 11, 90: fortredene, weak; L. S. xxiii. B. 524: gedrefedu). The GSMN. is once -es (Chron. 1100 E) and once -ed (Christ 20: forweynd). The GSF. is -re (2 exs.). The DSMN. is sometimes inflected (-um (-an): 11 exs.: EWS. 7, Gosp. 1, Benet 1, Poems 2), but is oftener not inflected (21 exs.: Ælfric 17, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 2, Poems 2). The DSF. is occasionally inflected (-re: 4 exs.: Ælfred 1, Ælfric 2, Gosp. 1), but usually not (14 exs.: Bl. Hom. 1, Ælfric 12, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 1). The ASM. is sometimes inflected (-ne: 47 exs.: Ælfric 10, Ælfric 17, Gosp. 11, Poems 8, Benet 1), sometimes not (33 exs.: Ælfric 1, Ælfric 28, Poems 4). The ASF. is half the time inflected (-e: 18 exs.: Ælfred 3, Ælfric 2, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 1, Gosp. 1, Wulfst. 1, Poems 10), the other half not (17 exs.: Ælfred 1, Ælfric 6, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 1, Wulfst. 3).

1 In one of these (Benet 107. 7) the text has -enne for -endne.
2 These regular variants of -od- will not be specified hereafter.
Benet 2, Poems 4). The ASN. is uninflected except in Bede 314. 14 (getrymede, but MS. Ca.: getrymed). The N. and APM. is habitually inflected (-e: over 200 exs., in all the texts), but occasionally not (15 exs.: E. W. S. 4, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 1, Benet 1, Poems 9). The N. and APF. is invariably inflected (-e 29 exs.; -au 1 ex.: Benet 92. 15, but see note thereon in statistics). The N. and APN. is usually inflected (-e: 24 exs.; -an, weak, 1 ex.: Bede 182. 23), but is uninflected at times (13 exs.: Ælfred 2, Bened. 1, Poems 10). The GP. is inflected regularly (-ra: 13 exs.) except once in the Chron. (656 E: leered). The DP. is inflected four times (-am), and is uninflected three times (Ælfred 1, Ælfric 2).

It is evident, therefore, that in Anglo-Saxon, especially in Late West Saxon and in the poems, the appositive participle is often not inflected, much oftener indeed than is stated in Sievers’s Angelsächsische Grammatik. The same is true of Old High German (Mourek, p. 19; O. Erdmann, Syntax d. Spr. Offrids, § 355) and of Old Saxon (Pratje, § 156), but not of Gothic (Gering, p. 393).

Again, the inflexion of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon is almost invariably strong. In this sentence from the Blickling Homilies (107. 20: Da eaðmodan hearan and ða forhigendan and ða bifigendan and ða cwacigendan and ða ondrændan heora Scyppend, ne forhogað ða nêfri God ne ne forsyhð), the weak participle, ondrændan, has an object, and is partly attributive and partly appositive. The sentence illustrates well, I think, the passage of the attributive into the appositive use of the participle; the participle is thrust into post-position because its principal has several participial modifiers, and because the participle itself has a direct object (see section iii., above). Sometimes, even in pre-position, the weak participle is strongly appositive, as in Luke 6. 49: He is gelic ðam timbriendan men his hus ofer ða corðan = similis est homini aedificanti domum super terram;—Bede 182. 23: was geworden ðatte ðore seolfan neahste ða brohton (MS. B.:}
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 153

gebrohtan) ban ute awunedon = 148. 17: factum est ut . . . .
reliquiae adlatae foris permanerent; ib. 24. 22; ÆElfr. Hom. II., 90*2; ÆElfr. L. S. xxvii. 117. Compare, too, Bede¹ 130.
33: ßat he secelde his freond ßone betstan in necde gesetum
(MS. B.: gesettan) in gold bebycgan = 110. 9: amicum sum
optimum in necessitate positum au ro uendere. Mourek (p. 46)
cites three examples of the appositive participle with weak
inflection in Tatian.

In Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle regularly follows
its principal (post-position), though occasionally it precedes
(pre-position: about 100 exs. in all, of which 8 occur in the
Poems). Typical illustrations are: Matthew 8. 25: hy awehton
hyne, ßus eweßende = suscitaverunt eum, dicentes; Beowulf
1819: we selißend secgan wyllaß, feorran cu mene; Beow. 721:
Com . . . rine sißian dreamum bedeßed;—Math. 2. 11: gaßyende
into ßam huse, hi gemetton ßat cild mid Marian = intrantes
domum invenerunt pu erum; Beow. 1581: sleßende fræt folces
Denigea fyftyne men. It should be added that it is particu-
larly difficult to distinguish between the post-positive attribu-
tive and the appositive participle; but what Mourek (p. 44)
says of Tatian seems to me true of Anglo-Saxon in general:
most post-positive participles are appositive rather than
attributive.
CHAPTER I.

STATISTICS OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

Explanatory Note.

With the exception of the glosses and of a few out-of-prints, I have made a statistical reading of the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature and of the more definitely known Latin originals of the prose texts. For a detailed statement, see the bibliography.

Within the respective groups the works are arranged approximately in their chronological order, except the Minor Poems, which are given in their alphabetic order.

For the light that it throws upon Anglo-Saxon and Germanic syntax, the participle with an object is everywhere separated from the participle without an object. Obviously the distinction is of less importance for the preterite than for the present participle. As applied to the present participle, the term object has its usual signification; as applied to the preterite participle, it includes not only the object in the ordinary acceptation, but also any noun modifier of the participle.

To show the inflection of the participle, each case, number, and gender is cited separately. The abbreviations used to designate these are self-explanatory, as nsn. = nominative, singular, neuter, etc. Cases not cited do not occur. "Other examples" are throughout cited in the alphabetic order of the Anglo-Saxon participles. Compound participles are not separated from the simple ones.

For convenience I have not distinguished 8 and p, but have uniformly used 8.
In all of the more definitely known translations the Latin original is given.

I have carefully compared my own statistics with those given in the monographs upon Anglo-Saxon syntax named in the bibliography; and but for the divergent views, already discussed, as to what constitutes an appositive participle, I should give in detail the results of my several collations. However, if the definition given in each treatise is observed, the difference is not great; hence I shall call attention to only the more noteworthy discrepancies disclosed by my collations.

I have tried to make the statistics complete according to the definition given in my Introduction. But, in such a mass of details, occasional omissions and misclassifications are inevitable; I can only hope that they will not prove so numerous or serious as to invalidate this history of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon.

Finally, I trust that these statistics, which at first doubtless appear unnecessarily detailed, may throw some light on several problems not germane to the purpose of this monograph, such as the contested authorship of the Alfredian works; the Anglo-Saxon vocabulary; the relationship of Anglo-Saxon to Latin syntax aside from the use of the participle, etc.;—some of which I hope to take up at another time.

I. IN THE PROSE WORKS.

**BEDE**¹ (180).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (107).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (93).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (58):—

NSM. (23):—22. 34: Ḟæt sum on N. mægðe of deaðe arisende . . . secgende wæs = 303. 24: Ut quidam . . . a
mortuis resurgens ... narraverit; 102. 21 is sægd sæet he beotigende forecwæde = 83. 27: furgur munitans praedixisse.—
Other examples :—8. 19: becumende = 36. 4: perueniens; 24. 3; ib. = 311. 1: ueniens; 270. 4: beotende = 211. 10: munitans; 22. 29; bodiende = 298. 27: praedicans; 12. 11: cumende = 97. 4: ueniens; 8. 16: ib. = 33. 21: navigans; 8. 28; ib. = 39. 29: reverusus; 114. 21: fleoninde = 92. 24: fugiens; 190. 18: forhtigende = 153. 1: tremens; 62. 13: ge- fende = 47. 22: credens; 442. 26: gnorniende = 314. 14: merens; 154. 3: grimsiende = 128. 6: saecuens; 204. 17: ondiconiende = 160. 24: incembens; sorcende = sollicitus, 186. 23 = 150. 29, 268. 7 = 210. 9; sweeteunde = moriens, 18. 18 = 220. 21 (or attrib. in A.-S.? ) and 286. 6 = 221. 3; ib. = moriturus, 24. 5 = 313. 26; 410. 27: swigende = 297. 23: tacitus; 86. 22: vacecende = 60. 28: sciens; 86. 22b: (no)woetende = 61. 1: nesciens (I insert no from MSS. Ca. and O.).

NSF. (3):—332. 2: Æree & Ættiæg Æsem ærestumu heo æsælice gefylde in weoruldhade drohtende = 252. 23:.xxxii primos in sacculari habitu nobilissimæ conversata compleuit.—

NSN. (1):—86. 10: mid ðy sæt mood ðis ne wotende ærefynd = 60. 7: quia hanc animum nescientem pertulisse.

NSM. or F. (2):—240. 26: wol ... grimsigrunde = 192. 4: desaeuens; 264. 25: ingongende = 208. 25: egressa (the two preceding nouns are ða stefn and ðone sang. Of ingressa the subject is voc).

NPM. (8):—252. 2a b: se b. and heora laneowas gesceonde and blissigrunde ham hwurfon = 200. 7: sacerdotes, doctor-esque ... rediere laetantes.—Other examples:—310. 1: feochtende = 233. 19: compugnantes; 284. 15: forhtende = 220. 5: tremefactae; 312. 2: ondetende = 239. 24: professi;

1In this text the superior letters distinguish different examples in the same line.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 157

54. 4: sarigende = 32. 33: dolentes; 438. 30: sittende = 312. 11: residens; 186. 9: sorgiende = 150. 13: solliciti.

NPN (1):—158. 27: ŝider gyfeonde coman . . . folc Godes word to gehyranne = 132. 20: confluuebant ad audiendum verbum populi gaudentes (or pred.).

NDM. (2):—430. 27: hwerfende = 308. 7: reuersi; 424. 20: suigiende = 304. 30: tacentes.

GPN. (1):—104. 18: seo is rnonigra folca ceapstow of londe and of se cumendra = 85. 11: . . . populorum terra mariqueuenientium.


DSF. (1):—288. 34: swa swa heo to hire lijigen dre sprece, bæd ðæt, etc. = 223. 5: quasi uixientem adlocuta, rogavit.


ASM. (3):—228. 19: he corre ðone cyning lijigen de gehran mid ðære gyrd = 174. 6: Iratus autem tetigit Regem iacentem.—Other examples:—312. 27b: forðleorende = 240. 22: procedentem ; 270. 22: lijigende (MS. Ca.: lijigendne) = 211. 30: in carne manentem.

ASN. (2):—140. 12: he noht elles dyde . . . ðon ðæt cumende Cristes folc ðider of eallum tunum . . . mid god-cundre lare timbrede = 115. 4: nil alius ageret quam con-fluentem eo . . . plebēm C. . . . verbo instruere; 412. 13: ligende = 298. 9: iacentem.

APM. (2):—276. 12: licade us efencuman æfter ðæwe arwyrdra rehta sneagende bi ðæm, etc. = 215. 1: placuit conuenire nos, . . . tractaturos de, etc.; 10. 29: hwyle wracu hi forhogiende æfterfyligde = 81. 8: quaèue illos spernentes
ultio secuta est. [Miller and Smith have *him forhogiende*, in which case *forhogiende* would be a "crude" dative plural; but it seems preferable to read *hi forhogiende*, the variant given by Miller and Schipper, which corresponds better with the Latin. Though Miller apparently so translates, *him* could scarcely be the object of *forhogiende*, since according to Wülfing (p. 186) this verb governs the accusative only.]

APF. (2):—426. 33a-b: *sa geseah ic mærego ðara wergra gasta v. monna sawla grornende & heofende teon & lædan on = 306. 13a-b: considero turbam malignorum spirituum, quae quinque animas hominum merentes heuilantesque . . . trahebat.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually in immediate connection with an appositive participle (5):—

NSM. (3):—160. 15: he *ða gifeonde ðearfum rehte and sealde = 135. 28: Cuncta . . . mox hauperibus . . . ergare gaudebat (cf. *gefeonde = gaudentes* in 158. 27 = 132. 20, etc.).—Other examples:—88. 17a-b: *goiende *geomriende cwæð = 61. 25: *gemebat dicens.


3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (20):—

NSM. (16):—22. 17a-b: *Dæt he his preosta þenne . . . gebiddende *þ blestigende fram deaðe gecyrde = 289. 4a-d: orando ac benedicendo a morte reuocauerit.—Other examples:—348. 25: bebeodende = 262. 18: commendando; 270. 34: *dwolende = 212. 11: errando; 346. 3: *codercende = 260. 31: ruminando; 246. 25b: *gongende = 195. 21b: incedendo; gebiddende = orando, 8. 23b = 37. 5, 12. 10 = 93. 26, 16. 2 = 158. 27, 20. 29 = 271. 3, 22. 7b = 281. 2, 22. 11 = 285. 1, 22. 14 = 288. 1; ib. = benedicendo, 22. 9
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 159

= 282. 30; 246. 25*: ridende = 195. 21*: equitando; 348. 24: segniende = 262. 17: signando.

NSF. (2):—72. 3a&b: sætte oft [cirice is to be supplied from earlier part of sentence] sæt wiðerworde yfel aborende and ælde (MS. O.: yldende) bewereð = 51. 29, 30: ut saepe malum quod adversatur portando et dissimulando conprescat.

NPM. (1):—72. 9: ða ðe him ne ondrædað weotonde syngian = 52. 1: qui non metuunt sciendo peccare.

ASM. (1):—22. 16*: Þæt he his preosta ðæne of horse fallende & gebrysedne gelice gebiddende & bletsigende fram decaðe gecyrrde = 289. 4a: Ut clericum suum cadendo contributum, acue orando ac benedicendo a morte reuocauerit.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):—

NSM. (1):—204. 3: he . . . on ðære styðe stondende forðerde = 160. 5: . . . adelinis destinae . . . spiritum, uitae exhalaret ultimum.

NPM. (1):—54. 5: sume forhtiende on eðle gebidon = 33. 1: alii perstantes in patria trepidi . . . agebant.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—

NSM. (1):—142. 8: sægde he ðæt he hine eneoh weosende gesawe = 116. 12: et se in pueritia vidisse testabatur. [hine here stands for here, ‘sanctuary.’—Cf. Bede 188. 1: in ðam mynstre . . . in ðam eneochtvesendum ðis hælo wundor geworden wæs = 151. 15: in eodem monasterio . . . in quo tunc puerio factum erat hoc miraculum sanitatis, in which eneochtvesendum is perhaps a substantive. Cf. further Widsið 39; Beow. 46, 372, 535, 1187.]

6. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adverb (2):—

NSM. (1):—38. 1: ða . . . he calle ða witu . . . geðyldelice and gefeonde for Drihtne abær and æraſe = 20. 1: Qui. . . patienter hæc pro Domino immo gaudenter ferebat. [Perhaps it is better to consider gefeonde here as a pure adverb.]
NPM. (1)—310. 30: Das we seondon arfaestlice fyligende & rihtwuldríende = 239. 23: Hos itaque sequentes nos pie atque orthodoxe. [Pure adverb? Cf. 310. 25: we wæron smægende ræhte gælæfan & rihtwuldríende = 239. 17: fidem rectam & orthodoxam exposuimus, where rihtwuldríende is an adjective.]

7. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin future infinitive (2):

NPM. (2)—266. 32a,b: æfter seofon dagum heo eft hveorfende & cumende me gehælton; ð me ðonne mid him lædan woldon = 209. 34: se redituros, ac me secum adducturos esse promiserunt.

8. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (3):

NSM. (1)—464. 16: gefeonde ða heosounlican rico gestah & gesolte = 330. 1: no Latin correspondent.

NPM. (1)—100. 12: ða ondættan eac Brettas sæomiende ðæt heo ongeton = 82. 14: Tum Brettones confitentur quidem intellexisse se.

ASM. (1)—214. 32: ða gegreopon ða uncænan gastas sænne of ðæm monnum ðe heo in ðæm fyre bærædon and ðæwæton ð wurþon swa beornendæ on hine & he gehæn his sculdæ ð his ceæcan ð hine swa forbærædon = 166. 26: arripientes immundi spiritus unum de cis, quos in ignibus torrebant, iactaverunt in eum, et contingentes humerum maxillamque eius incenderunt.

II. With an Object (14).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (14):

NSM. (8)—378. 25: he mid ðy mæstan gewinne mid his cryce hine wercgægende ham becom [MS. B.: hine gewrædæde & ham becom] = 278. 15: maximo eum labore baenlo innitens domum peruenit. Cf. 380. 7: his leomo mid his cryce wercgægende code in cyrican [MS. B.: gewrædæde &
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 161

eode] = 278. 27: artus baculo sustentans intranit ecclesiam.—14. 4: Æt se ylca cyning biddende ... biscope onfeng Aidanum on naman gehatenne = 131. 4: Ut ... rex postulans antistitem ... acceperit Aidanum. Cf. 10. 12: andsware biddende onfeng = 48. 2: responsa petens acceperit.—10. 7: and swa ... G. word bodigende on Cent eode = 44. 25: sic ... Cantiam praedicaturus intranerit.—352. 14: Æt sette ... ongan, swa he eft for intingan Æere godcundan lufan lustfulliende Æam ecum medium fæstlice forðlaeste = 264. 12: quod ... iam causa diuini amoris delectatus praemiis indefessus agebat.—450. 20: mid Æy he wæs godre gleannesse cnihit Æ he Æa yldo mid Æawum oferstigende [MS. B.: wæs oferstigende] & he swa gemetfæstlice & swa ymbsceawenldlice hine sylfne on callum Æingum beheold Æet = 322. 27: atque aetatem moribus transiens, ita ... gereret ut (or pred. ?).—16. 8: Æt se ... b. onfonde ... sume stowe mynster on to timbrianne, & Æa mid halgum gebedum & fæstenum Driftne gehalgode = 174. 22: Ut idem episcopus locum ... accipiens ... Domino consecraverit.

NPM. (3):—312. 23a&b: we wuldríað usserne D. swa swa Æas wulhrédon ... noht tædecende Æðde onweg ætæonde = 240. 18a&b: glorificamus D. sicut ... nihil addentes vel subtractentes.—312. 25: Æa Æe heo onfengon we eac swelec onfóð ... wuldríende God Fæder, etc. = 240. 20: suscepimus, glorificantes Deum, etc.

GSN. (1):—426. 30: gehled & ceabetunge swa swa unge-læredes folces & biosmriendes gehæftum heora feondum = 306. 10: cachinum crepitantem quasi uulgi indoecti captis hostibus insultantis.

APM. (2):—54. 31: sende munecas mid hine Drithen ondredende = 42. 21: misit monachos timentes Dominum.—358. 10: Ac forðon Æe he ne wolde Æy ærran geare gehyran Æone arwyrdan fæder Ecgberht, Æet he Scoottas hine noht sceððende ne afuhte = 267. 7: sed quoniam nolverat audire E., ne Scottiam nil se ledentem impugnaret.
Note.—In Bede\(^1\) 430. 18 (in sæere ic eae swylye ða swehtestan stæfne geherdæ Godes lof singendra = 307. 31 : in qua etiam uocem *cantantium* dulcissimam audini) we have a substantivized participle with an object.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (73).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (60).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (47):—

NSM. (14):—318. 1: *sæt...* lichomæ *bebyrged* brosnian ne meahte = 243. 24 : *sepulta* caro corrumpi non potuit.—

Other examples:—400. 25: *bewirgen* = 290. 15: *oblectus*; 396. 20: *foræræd* = 288. 9: *defunctus*; 442. 22: *ge-cædmodæd* = 314. 10: *humilis*; 8. 23\(^b\): *gehæfd* [MS. B.: *wæs gehæfd*] = 37. 5: *detentus*; 442. 23: *geniæræd* = 314. 12: *damnatus*;—

*gesæted* = *positus*, 20. 27 = 268. 20 & 444. 5 = 314. 21; 10. 10: *geworden* = 48. 1: *factus*; 260. 7: *hænæn* = 205. 28: *iussum*; 278. 18\(^b\): *ib.* = 216. 16\(^b\): *invitatus*; 92. 17: *oferswiðæd* = 71. 23: *uictus*; 352. 13: *onbryrdæd* = 264. 11: *comnæctus*; 278. 18\(^a\): *onfængen* = 216. 16\(^a\): *susceptus*.

NSF. (4):—330. 30: *heo of eorðan, alædæd* leorde ðæ *gefætgædan diegæ* = 252. 20: *de terris ablata* transitum.—


NSN. (1):—78. 15: *wiæf in blodes flosnesse* *gesæted* = 52. 1: in fluxu *posita*; *ib.* 78. 28 = 56. 5.

NS. M. or N. (1):—150. 13: ... *meæl & cælic ... gehælgæd* = 126. 9: *calicæm ... conseæratæm*.

NS. N. or F. (1):—262. 22: *wæel & monæwild* *gesænedæd* = 207. 21: *eldæs missæa*.

NPM. (7):—164. 7: *ofææet* heo stycemælæm *aæfædde ...* beboda onfon meahte (MS. Ca.: mihten) = 137. 17:

NPN. (2):—140. 3: væron eac gefulwade őðer his bearn of A. ðære cwene acende = 114. 25: Baptizati sunt alii liberi eius de A. progeniti.—182. 23: ðæs geworden ðæste ðære scolfa neahte ða brohton (MS. B.: gebrohtan) ban ute awunedon = 148. 17: factum est ut . . . reliquiaæ adlatae foris permanerent (may be attrib.).

DSF. (1):—320. 7: cwomon heo to sumre ceastre gehrorene noht fór ðonon = 245. 1: uenerunt ad ciuitatulam quondam desolatam, non procul inde sitam.

DSN. (1):—338. 32: in oðrum mynstre fyrr gesettum = 257. 2: in alio longius posito monasterio.


ASF. (3):—58. 25a&b: Bæron . . . anlicnesse Drihtnes Hælendes on brede afægde and awritene = 46. 2: ferentes . . . imaginem . . . in tabula depictam; 484. 28: gesylde = 359. 29: adiectum.

ASN. (3):—122. 12: Hæfde he . . . twiege handseax geættred = 99. 3: qui habebat sicam bicipitem toxicaatem.—Other examples:—106. 7: gehalgod = 86. 12: dedicatum; 314. 14: priuilegium of ðære apostolican aldorlicnesse getrymede (MS. Ca.: getrymed) = 241. 14: . . . epistulam privilegii
ex auctoritate apostolica firmatam (getrymede due to close following of firmatum?).

APM. (1):—296. 7: Geseah he . . . ðry wapnedmen to him cuman mid beorhtum hræglum gegeyredde = 226. 21: Uidit enim . . . tres ad se uenisse niros claro induitos habitu.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin predicative participle (1):—

NSN. (1):—272. 6: Is ofer his byrgenne stowe treowgeweorc on gelincnesse medmicles huses geworht, mid hrægle gegeyred = 212. 17: Est antem locus idem sepulcri tumba lignea in modum domunculi facta co-opertus.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (3):—

NSM. (3):—342. 4=6: In . . . mynstre wæs sum broðor syndriglice mid godeundre gife gemæredað geworcæd = 258. 28: In m. fuit frater quidam diuina gratia specialiter insignis; 88. 25: geneded = 62. 2: inuitus.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—

NSM. (1):—16. 15: Æset E. se halga wer of Angelcynnes cynne aecenned munuclif wæs lædende on Hibernia = 191. 26: Ut E., uir sanctus de natione Anglorum, monachicam in H. uitam duxerit.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (8):—


ASM. (1):—14. 5: Æset se ylea cyning biddende . . . biscope (MS. B.: bysceop) onfeng Aidanum on naman gehatenne = 131. 4: Ut idem rex postulans antistitem . . . acceperit Aidanum. [Cf. 158. 12: him biscep sendon, Aidan
was haten = 131. 15: accept namque pontificem Aedanum.]

APM. (1) = 328. 7: ða stafas mid him awriten hæfde (or pred.?) = 250. 28: no Latin equivalent. [MS. B. omits awriten.]

APN. (1) = 108. 17: ða ðing ðe ðær gedemed wæron... writ at and stesnade ond eft hwearf to B. ða mid hine on Ongolciircium to healdenne awiten brohte = 88. 22 (or pred.?)

II. With an Object (13).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (12): —

NSM. (3) = 214. 11: eft onlyzed ðy lichoman byrneð = 166. 4: ita solutus corpore ardebit.—Other examples: —

478. 1: eldo fornumen = 349. 29: consumtus aetate; 440. 20: witum underœoded = 313. 3: penis subditus.

NSF. (1) = 332. 16: Forðon ðe... Hereswið... regollicum œodscipum underœoded, baad ðone ecan sige = 253. 10: Nam H. ... regularibus subdita disciplinis expectabat.

GSF. (1) = 172. 26: Þisse fœmannan Gode gehalgodre monige wære... gewuniað... sægd beon = 143. 1: Huius autem uirginis Deo dicatae solent, etc.

GPF. (1) = 284. 32: in ðara fœmnenæ mynstre Gode gehalgodra = 220. 26: in uirginum Deo dedicatarum cella.

DSM. (1) = 16. 12: Se cyning for ðam sige scaldan ham... sealdæ, etc. = 129. 11: pro adepta uictoria... dederit.

DPF. (1) = 14. 15: be E. and A. Gode gehalgedum fœnum = 142. 2: de E. and Æ., sacratis Deo uirginibus.

DPN. (1) = 24. 22: mid him ðam underœoddum mynstrum = 346. 14: cum subiectis sibi monasteriis (or attrib.?).

ASF. (1) = 252. 2: ne ðonne nemne medmiceal dæl hlafes and an henne sæg mid litle meole wætre gemengede he ofeng = 175. 30: cum paruo lacte aqua mixto percipiebat.

ASN. (1) = 344. 28: ðy betstan leode geglenged him asong
and ageaf, sæt him beboden wæs = 260. 24 : optimo carmine, quod iubebatur, compositum reddidit.

APN. (1) = 212. 23: Gesah he eac feower fyr onæled on ðære lyfte noht micle feece betweoh him tosceaden = 165. 20: . . . quatuor ignes . . . non multo . . . spatio distantes.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerundive (1):

NSF. (1) = 236. 29: Ða eode seo . . . dohtor . . . Gode gehałgod in sæt mynster = 179. 1: Intrauit filia Deo dedi-
canda monasterium.

BOETHIUS¹ (27).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (17).

I. Without an Object (17).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):

NSM. (1) = 14. 16: se broc, ðeah he swife of his rihtryne, ðonne¹ ðær micel stan wealhriende of ðam heohan munte oninnan feald & hine todæld & him his rihtrynes wiðstent = 23. 16: Quique uagatur montibus altis desfluus annuis, sœpe resistit rupe soluti obice saxi.

NSF. (1) = 81. 27: Swa ða gesceope ða saule ðæt hio seelode ealne weg hwærfian on hire selfre, swa swa eall ðæs roðor hwerfð, oððe swa swa hwæol onhwerfð, smeægænde ymb hire seecoppand oððe ymbe hi selfe = 71. 13: Tu triplicis medium naturae cuncta moventem conectens animam per consona membra resoluis. Quae cum secta duos motum glorerauit in orbes, in semet reditura meat mentemque profundam circuit et simili convertit imagine caelum.

2. The A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which verb is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (1):

¹ I have expanded the contractions of this text.
NPM. (1):—108. 14: irnað hidres ðidres dwoligende under ðæm hrofe eallra gesceafta = 93. 78: sed circa ipsam rerum summam uerticemque deficient nec in eo miseris contingit effectus quodulum dies noctesque moluntur.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative (2):

NSM. (2):—8. 8¹ ²: wepende & gisciende = 3. 2: fletibus.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds loosely to a Latin substantive in the nominative (1):

NPM. (1):—74. 31: dwoliende = 67. 9: error etc.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):

NSM. (2):—8. 15: geomriende asungen hædle = 4. 2: querimoniam lacrimabilem; 8. 6: ic sceal nu heofinde singan = 3. 1: flebilis.

6. The A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (9):

NSM. (9):—3. 7: Hu B. hine singende gebæð; singende cwað: 9. 29, 46. 2, 48. 22, 60. 27, 71. 4, 8. 5 (singend—), 73. 22 (singinde—); 17. 14: sorgiende anforlete.

II. With an Object (0).

No example.

B.—The Preterite Participle (10).

I. Without an Object (10).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (3):

GPM. and N. (2):—11. 27, 28¹: Ne me na ne lyst mid glase geworhtra (or attrib.?) waga ne heahsetla mid golde & mid gimmum gerenodra = 19. 21: ... compotos eboræ æc uintro parietes.

ASN. (1):—133. 22: God seleð ægðer ge good ge yfel gemenged = 112. 140: mixta.
   NS. F. or N. (1):—91. 8: wuht... ₴e ungened lyste forwecordan = 78. 45: *nullis cogentibus.*
3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb (1):
   NSM. (1):—46. 27: se nama mid feaum stafum *awriten* = 47. 17: *signat nomen literis.*
   NP. F. or N. (1):—100. 22: gesceafra hiora agnum willum *ungencdde* him waren underdiodde = 83. 47: *voluntaria sponte.*
5. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (4):
   NSN. (1):—131. 27: *gemenged* = 111. 96 (cf. 133. 22: *gemenged* = 112. 140: *mixta*).
   NPM. (2):—30. 25, 26: Sonne sint hi ₴e pliolieran & geswinefulran *hæfd* Sonne *næfd*.
   GPF. (1):—11. 28: boca mid golde *awrætenra* = 19. 21 (an ap. ptc. occurs in the Latin of this sentence, but not corresponding to *awrætenra*).

II. **With an Object (0).**

No example.

**Gregory**¹ (82).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (58).

I. **Without an Object.** (56).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (9):
   NSM. (2):—261. 11: Se ilca swiugende gesafofe swingellan = 196¹: *tacitus flagella toleravit*; 225. 22: *Seahligende* = 170²: *retractantes*.

¹ In this text a refers to the top and b to the bottom of the page.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 169

NSN. (1):—431. 18: Swa bið sæt mod sleepende gewundad swa hit ne gefret, ñonne etc. = 356a: Mens quippe a cura suae sollicitudinis dormiens verberatur et non dolet, quia etc.

NPM. (3):—405. 31: Ac ña hie wendon hêra hræc to him, ña hi ofermodiende his gebod forhogdon = 326a: superbiens ejus jussa contemnit.—Other examples:—259. 19: suigende = 196a: taciti; 171. 9: surhunnende = 126a: inhuerentes.

DSM. (2):—93. 9: Hit is ecueden sæt se sacerd scolde sweltan, gif se sweg nære of him gehiered ge inngongendum ge utgongendum = 62b: Sacerdos namque ingrediens vel egressus moritur, se de eo sonitus non auditur.

ASM. (1):—399. 14: Sio Segor gehelde Loth fleondne = 318a: Segor civitas, quae fugientem salvet infirmum.

Note.—In 159. 18 (ñæt hi ñonne gehieran ñreagende of ñes larioves muþe hu micle byrdenne hie habbað on hiera scyldum = 116a: ut cum culpa ab auctore non cognoscitur, quanti sit ponderis, ab increpantis ore sentiatur) ñreagende, as Cosijn suggests (vol. 2, p. 97), is doubtless used adverbially. We should expect the genitive, ñreagendes, to agree with larioves. Compare the use of ñreatigende in 315. 23, etc.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb either is subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle that has been turned into an A.-S. finite verb (6):—

NSM. (5):—93. 6: Hit is awritten sæt se scolde inngongende & utgongende beforan Gode to ñam halignessum beon gehiered his suig, ñylaes he swulte = 62b: Scriptum quippe est: “Ut audiatur sonitus, quando ingreditar et egressus sanctuarium in conspectu Domini, et non moriatur.”—151. 24: he hit him ñeah suigende gesæde = 110a: et hoc ipsum tamen, qua taceverit, dixit. [Just before this, however, occurs tacens et quasi non videns].—369. 4: sinoþigende cwæð = 286a: queritur dicens.—315. 23: ñreatigende cwæð = 244a: redarguit dicens.

NPM. (1):—215. 7: unwillende = 162a: quae non appetunt.
3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (18):

NSM. (13):—101. 14: & eft hine selfne ofdune *astig-gende* he ende gemetgian his hieremo[n]um = 70b: quia noverat eumdem se auditoribus *condescendendo* temperare.—379. 19: ßætte he eac *cigende & laerne* ßædre ßider tio & laðige ßider he getogen bid = 294b: Ut . . . illuc etiam *elamando* alios quo ipse rapitur trahat.—Other examples:—27. 21: geSa*jende = 8a: permittendo; 127. 6: oliecende = 88b: *demulcendo*; 49. 20 and 81. 10: sprecende = 26b and 54a: *loquendo*; 123. 21: stirende = 86b: *corrigendo*; 127. 7: ßreatigende = 88b: *terrendo*; 383. 8: ib. = 298a: *increpando*; 295. 12 and 297. 15: wandigende = 222b and 224b: *parcendo*; 81. 11: wyrcende = 54a: *ostendendo*.

NSN. (1):—433. 6: ßæt is ßæt hit [= mod] ßa gedonan undeawas *swincende* gèbete, & ßa ungédonan foredoncelice becierrre = 358a: ut et præsenti *lavorando* subjiciat, et contra futura certamina prospeciendo convalescat.

NPM. (4):—439. 15: ßæt hi ongiten *feallende* ßæt hie ær hiora agnes ßonces ne stodon = 364b: et cadendo discunt non fuisse proprium quod steterunt.—Other examples:—91. 22: hlydende = 62a: *elamando*; 345. 22: ofermoldgiende = 266b: *superbiendo*; 101. 21: upsceawiende = 70a: *contem-plando*.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the genitive (1):—

NPM. (1):—191. 4: ßæt hie wel *libben[de]* gode bisene astellen ßæm ße him underSiedde sien = 142b: discant . . . isti quomodo etiam commissis sibi exempla bene *vivendi* exterins praebent.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (7):—

NSM. (4):—397. 27, 28: Ne cweðo ic no ßæt ßæt ic ær cweð bebeoden, ac *laerne & geSa*jigende = 316a: Hoc autem dico secundum indulgentiam non secundum imperium; 253. 6: *geomriende = 192a: in dolore.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 171

NSN. (1):—417. 11: geðafigende = 338b: ex delibratione.
NPM. (2):—415. 6: Wutan euman ær his dome andet-tende (or pred.?) = 336a: Praeveniamus faciem Domini in confessione; 123. 16: weaxende = 286a: ad iterum.

6. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative of manner or of means (6):


NPM. (2):—185. 7: is cynn ðætte we for hira modes hælo olicende hi on smylnnessæ gebringen mid ure spræce = 138a: dignum est, ut ad salutem mentis quasi dulcedine citharae locutionis nostræ tranquilliæ revocetur; 117. 17: suigende = 82a: tacita cogitatione.

7. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adverb (1):

NPM. (1):—381. 25: ... Godes ǣgnes, ða ðe unwandiende ðæra scyldegena gyltas ofslogen = 296b: qui delinquentium scelerà ineunctanter ferirent (or pure adverb?).

8. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin infinitive (3):

NSM. (2):—403. 6: Forðæm ðe ðe hine selfne maran godes behæt, & ðonne foræt ða maran god, & went hine to ðæm læssum, ðonne bið hit swutol ðæt he bið fromlociende oferswided = 322a: Iuì igitur fortiori studio intenderat, retro convictur respicere, si relictis amplioribus bonis adminina retorquetur.—61. 3: Ŝe lace bið miicles to beald & to scom-leas Ŝe gæð æfter oðra monna husum læcetige (or pred.?), & haefð on his agnum nebbe opene wunde unlacnode = 36a: Si ergo adhuc in ejus opere passiones vivunt, qua presumtione percußus mederi proprat, qui in facie vulnus portat?

NPM. (1):—297. 4: Ŝua, ðonne ðonne hatheortan hie mid nane foreðoncæ nyllað gestillan, ac sua wedende folgiæð hwam sua sua Assael dyde Æfinere, & næfre nyllað gesuican,
Sonne is micel ðearf etc. = 224a: Sed cum iraeundi nulla consideratione se mitigant, et quasi Asael persequi et insanire non cessant; necesse est etc.


NSM. (1):—207. 22: Forðæm he sprec ðæs word ðæ he wolde ðara seamlesasna seylde telende geopenian = 156a: ut et illorum culpas increpation dura detegeret.

10. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (3):

NSM. (3):—185. 9: æresð mon seal sprecan asciende.—
153. 5: Ac ðonne se lareow ieldende secd ðone timan etc.—
39. 16: suigende he cwæð.

II. With an Object (2).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):

NSM. (1):—99. 4: & ðætte hie [Cotton MS.: he] sua healaric sainga wilmigende ne forsió his niéhestan untrume & seylde = 68a: ne aut alta petens proximorum infirma despiciat.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (1):

NPM. (1):—171. 13: Þæt is ðonne ðæt mon ða earce bere on ðæm saglum, ðætte ða godan lareowas ða halgan gesommunge larende ða niwan & ða ungeleawfullen mod mid hire lare gelvede [sic!] to ryhtum gelæfan = 126a: Vectibus quippe aream portare, est bonis doctoribus sanctam Ecclesiam ad rudes infidelium mentes praedicando deducere. [Cotton MS. has beoð larende.]

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (24).

I. Without an Object (23).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (11):—
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

NMF. (4):—443. 22: Ac ʒa he swa gebreged on eordan feoll, & acسود, & ćwaęđ etc. = 370.b Nam cum prostratus, requireret, dicens.—Other examples:—135. 23: gehefegad and ofersnuted = 96b: victam; 51. 1: uncleansod = 26b: non purgatus.

NPF. (1):—153. 1: Ac monige scylda openlice witene beođ to forberanne = 110a: Nonnulla autem vel aperte cognita, mature toleranda sunt.

NPN. (2):—245. 8: Hwaet getacniađ ʒonne ʒa truman ceastra butan hwurfulu mod, getrymedu and ymbtrymedu mid lytelicre ladunge? = 184b: Quid enim per civitates munitas exprimitur, nisi suspectae mentes et fallaci semper defensione circumdatae?

DPM. or N. (1):—155. 10: ʒonne he ongiet be sumum ʒingum ođđe ʒeawum utanne utiewedum eall ʒet hie innan ʒeneaed = 112a: qui discussis quibusdam signis exterius apparentibus ita corda subditorum penetrat ut etc.

ASM. (2):—383. 32: gif mon on niwne we[a]ll unadru-godne & unastv&odne micelne hrof & hefigne onsett, ʒonne etc. = 300a: quod structuris recentibus needum solidatis si tignorum pondus superponitur etc.

ASN. (1):—403. 20: ʒet hi hit huru tobrocen gebeten = 322b: bona ... saltem scissa resarciant.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (2):—

NPM. (1):—227. 25: ʃe ... gefeoftađ & eft innan hira burgum feste belocene ʒurh hiera giemelieste hie letađ gebindan = 172b: qui victores sunt, sed per negligientiam postmodum intra urbis claustra capiuntur.

NPF. (1):—407. 30: forĎeum gif hie ʒeenceađ ʒara geselĎa ʃe him ungeendode æfter ʃeem geswincum becumun seolon = 328a: Si enim attendatur felicitas quae sine transiti attingitur.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin ablative of manner or of cause (1):—
NPM. (1):—435. 2: gif hi fierlcor syngoden unbedōhte = 360a: si in his sola precipitatione eccidissent.


NPM. (1):—109. 23: Hie sculon forðy ofdræfol[de] . . . liecean astræhte etc. = 76a: quia videlicet etc. ex ea debent etiam formidini jacere substrati.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adverb (2):

NPM. (2):—117. 23: . . . sua . . . sua we for monnum orsorglicor ungewnutode syngiað = 82a: Tanto . . . quanto apud homines inulē peccamus.—137. 19: Ungeniedde, mid eowrum agenum willan, ge sculon ðencean = 98b: non coacte, sed spontane etc. [Or are both pure adverbs?].

6. An A.-S. appositive participle loosely corresponds to a Latin substantive in the nominative (2):

NPM. (2):—302. 10: unmiddode and aðundene = 228b: effrenatio etc.

7. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):

NSM. (2):—227. 21: & he sonne sua gebunden . . . sargað etc. = 172b: ut plerumque vir patiens . . . captivus crubescat; 317. 12: ungedingod = 244b: repentina (or pure adverb?).

8. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):

NPM. (1):—105. 1: . . . chænran ðonne hie . . . wæren, mid ðæm tearum ðara gebeda aðwægen.

DPF. (1):—343. 8: æhtum gereafodu[m].

II. With an Object (1).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the accusative (1):

ASM. (1):—197. 20: hit no gedæfenlic nære ðæt hie slogon Gode gehalgodne kyning = 148a: fregit eos responsi-
onibus, quia manum mittere in Christum Domini non deberet (or attrib.?).

Orosius¹ (21).

A.—The Present Participle (16).

I. Without an Object (14).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (4):

NSM. (2):—200. 32: he him wepende (Sære bene) getyggede, for ðon ðe (he) seolde Italian forlætan = 201. 30: flens reliquit Italian; 240. 9: wepende mænde ða umare = 241. 8: deplorans injustias.

NSF. (2):—12. 32, 33: & ðonne forð ðonan west irnende heo tolið on twa ymb an igland ðe mon hæt Meroen, & ðonan norð bugende ut on ðone Wendelsæ = 13. 20, 22: deinde du ad occasum profluens, faciensque insulam nomine Meroen in medio sui: novissime ad septentrionem inflexus . . . plana Ægypti rigat.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive (2):

NSM. or N. (2):—166. 17, 18: ægðer ge he(self) wepende hamweard for, ge ðæt folc ðæt him ongean com, eall hit him wepende hamweard folgade = 167. 8: . . . ad cujus conspectum plagentium junguntur agmina.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):

NSM. (2):—294. 11: hiene siððan mid rapum be ðæm sweoran up aheng, gelicost ðæm ðe he hiene self(ne) unwitende hæfde awierged = 295. 8: strangulatus, atque ut voluntarium sibi conscivisse mortem putaretur, laqueo suspensus est (notice the mistranslation); 40. 18: fleonde = 41. 16: profugum.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (6):—
NSM. (4):—178. 24: searigende; unwitende: 248. 14, 250. 12; 140. 7: witende.
ASM. (1):—258. 12: slependne.
APM. (1):—200. 21: fleonde.

II. With an Object (2).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):

   NPM. (1):—32. 21: geforan RoDrum sæt igland, wilniende
   sæt hi sæcum gewinne oddflogen hæfdon = 33. 19: credentes
   quod se . . . abstraherent, Rhodum insulam . . . ceperunt.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (1):

   NSM. (1):—52. 27:AEAES folces Æone maestan dæl
   fleonde mid ealle forlædde [dæl seems to be the object of
   forlædde as well as of fleonde].

B.—The Preterite Participle (5).

I. Without an Object (5).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):

   NPF. (1):—14. 18: Ææes landes is xliii [sic] Æeoda, wide
   tosetene for unwæstmæbnesse Ææes londes = 15. 20: gentes
   sunt quadragina duae, propter terrarum infecundam diffu-
   sionem late oberrantes.

   ASN. (1):—168. 14: swa he hit him eft ham bebead on
   annum brede awritten etc. = 169. 10: . . . per tabellas scriptas
   etc.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):

   DPF. & M. (1):—88. 13: ÆEfter Æem was an ger full
   sæt ofer call Romana rice seo eorðæ was cwaciende & berstende
   & Ææe Æege mon com unarimedlice oft to (Æem) senatum, &
him sedon from burgum & from tunum on eordan besunen = 89. 10: Per totum fere annum tam crebri, tamque etiam graves in Italia terrae-motus fuerunt, ut de innumeris quassationibus ac ruinis villarum oppidorumque assiduis Romani nuntiis fatigaretur.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):
   NPM. (2):—92. 30: bewopene; 250. 14: ungeniedde.

II. With an Object (0).

No example.

**PSALMS, THORPE (24).**

A.—The Present Participle (20).

I. Without an Object (7).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):
   NSM. (1):—17. 3: herigende ic elypige to ðe, Drihten = laudans invocabo Dominum.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):
   NSM. (1):—50 Int. (= Introduction): hreowsiende = Bruce 93: Sub occasione paenitentiae.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the genitive (2):
   NSM. (2):—34 Int.¹: ma vitiende, ðonne wyrgende ðe wyniende = Bruce 86: non malevolentia optandi, sed praescientia prophetandi.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative (1):
   NSM. (1):—34 Int.²: wyrgende = Bruce 86: malevolentia.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):
   NSM. (2):—30 Int.: gebiddende to; 5. 7: hopiende to.
II. With an Object (13).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin absolute clause (1):
   NSM. (1):—38 Int.: *seofigende = Bruce 87: Angentibus . . . moeroribus.
   NSM. (1):—34 Int.: *siofigende = Bruce 85: Occasione urumnuarum suarum.
3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin equivalent (11):
   NSM. (11):—37 Int.: *andettende; 28 Int.: *beboedenden; 33 Int.: *gehatenden; 39 Int.: *gylpende; 32 Int.: herigende (cf. 17. 3, where herigende = laudans); 47 Int.: *mycienden; 37 Int.: *seofigende, ib. 43 Int.; 32 Int.: *sanciende, ib. 45 Int.; 31 Int.: *wundriende.

B.—The Preterite Participle (4).

I. Without an Object (4).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):
   APF. (2):—44. 15: *beslepte and *gegyrede = circumamicta.
2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):
   ASN. (1):—20. 3: *astened = de lapide.
3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):
   DSN. (1):—41 Int.: *folce *gehaftum etc. = Bruce 89: populus captivus etc.

II. With an Object (0).

No example.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 179

THE CHRONICLE* (46).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (13).

I. Without an Object (9).

NSM. (2):—1097 Ea & b (p. 233b): Đa uppon sancte Michaeles mæsan iii*N° October ætywde an seceluÐ steorra on æfen saymende & sona to setle gangende (or pred.).

NPM. (7):—1069 Da a b (p. 204m): & heom com ðær togenes Eadgar cild & Waldœof eorl & Ærælaweg eorl mid Norðymbrum & ealle ða land leoden ridende & gangende (or both pred.) mid unmetan here swiðe fiængendende & swa ealle onaetlelice to Eosierwic foron.—1075 Dsa b (p. 210m): ac he sylf & his ferestan menn ferdon eft ongean to Scotlannde, sume hrowlice on fotan gangende & sume earmlice ridende (or both pred.).—1123 E (p. 251c): & riden ðær spreencede (or pred.). Đa aseh dune se bisco etc.—1086 Ea (p. 218b): & twegen halige menn ðe hyrsu-medon Gode on ancersettelle wuniende ðær wæron forbearnde.

II. With an Object (4).

NSM. (1):—1087 E (p. 223m): Đas ðing geseonde se arwurða bisco Wlstan weart ða swiðe gedreft on his mode.

NPM. (1):—1083 E: & sume crupon under & gynre cleopedon to Gode, his miltse biddende.

ASN. (2):—656 Eb (p. 33c): seo papa seonde ða his writ, ðus ewsende: Ic Uitalianus papa etc.—Cf. 675 E (p. 35b): And seo papa seonde ða his gewrite to Englalande, ðus ewsende.

Note: Latin Participles in The Chronicle.—Several instances of a Latin appositive participle occur in the Chronicle but are not translated into A.-S.: 431 E: apparens; 625 E: constans.

*The superior letters outside the parenthesis distinguish the several examples of the same year; those inside the parenthesis are explained by Plummer.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (33).

1. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (33).

NSM. (12):—1104 E (p. 239a): on Æam Tiwæsdege Æær æfter ætywdan feower circulas to Æam midlæge onbutan Æære sunnan hwites hiwes, ælc under oðran gebroiden swylce hi gemette wæron.—50 E: Her Paulus gebunden wearð gesend to Rome (or pred.?).—755 F: & Sibertes broðer, Cynehard gehaten, oðsloþ Cynewulf on Merantune. So: 604 A (or pred.?), 777 E, 1130 E.—Other examples:—1118 E and 1127 E:b: gewundod; 1154 E: luved (or post-positive attrib.?); 3 A: ofsticod; 1086 E:b: ungedered (or pred.?); 1048 E: unswican (or pred.).

NSN. (1):—1127 E:a (p. 256b): Æær wæs se Scotte kyng Dauid & call Æa heaned heared & heanued Ææt wæs on Engle-land. [May be considered plural as by Plummer.]

NPM. (15):—1066 D:a, b, c (p. 199m): Æa Engliscan hi hindan hetelice slogan oð Ææt big sume to scype coman, sume adrunenc & sume eac forbernde & swa mislice forfarenæ, Ææt Æær wæs lyt to lafe.—Other examples:—gehadode: 995 E, 1012 E, 1095 E, 1102 E; 449 A: geleaXade; 1083 E:a: gewepnede (or pred.?); hadode: 1014 E, 1023 D, 1046 E (manig mann Æerto ge hadode ge læwede); 1096 E: hunger-bitene; 911 A: unbefohtenene (or pred.?); 1070 E: wep-node.

GSM. (1):—1100 E (p. 235a): æuces mannes gehadodes & læwedæs.

GPM. (1):—656 E:a (p. 29b): be his broðre red . . . & be al his gewiten red, heared & lawed, Æe on his kynerice wæron. DSM. (1):—1053 C:a: se Wulfwi feng to Æam biscoprice Æe Ælf hæfdle be him libbendum & ofdrafldun.

ASN. (2):—992 E:a, b: & Ææt scip genamon call gewepnod & gewædod.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.
THE APPOSiTIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 181

Note.—As the examples show, in many instances the participles (both present and preterite) above cited from the Chronicle are in immediate juxtaposition with intransitive verbs like actiwœan and fœran; hence even more examples than those queried may be predicative rather than appositive.

THE LAWS (19).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (4).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (3).

ASL. (1):—Ine, c. 35: Se ðeo slihðæ, he mot ðe ge¬
cyðan, ðæt he hine fleondne for ðeof sloge.

ASN. (2):—Cnut II., c. 24, Int.a b: nan ðinge ... ne
libbende ne liegende.

Note: Accusative Compounds.—Three accusative-compound participles occur in the Laws:—Ine, c. 45: Burg-bryce mon sceal betan ... gesiðcundes monnes landhebbendes xxxv; and Ine, c. 51a b: Gif gesiðcund mon landagende forsitte fierd, geselle cxx scill. and ðolie his landes; unlandagende lx scill. As the examples show, however, the participles are used attributively rather than appositively.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—Wihtrœl, c. 18: Preost hine clœnsie sylfes soðe, in his halgum hragelæ ætforæ wiofoðæ, ðæs cœwêndæ: "Ueritatem dico Christo, non mention."

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (15).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (15).

NSM. (1):—Ine, c. 39: Gif hwa fare unaliœfed frm his hlæforæ (MS. B. has unalifed, which is perhaps a pure adverb).
NSN. (2):—Cnut ii., c. 71, § 4\textsuperscript{a\&b}: twa hors, i. gesadelod and oðer ungesadelod.

NPM. (2):—Æthelred vii., Appendix, § 7: ealle ... ge-
hadode and læwedæ; Wihtred, c. 4: ungestrodyne.

NPN. (4):—Cnut ii., c. 71, Introduction: ðæt syndon
viii. hors, iv. gesadelode & iv. unsadelode.—So gesadelode
and unsadelode in Cnut ii., c. 71, § 1\textsuperscript{a\&b}.

GPM. (1):—Ædmund ii., Introduction : mid minra witen 
geðæalhte, ge hædeðra ge læwedra.

DSM. (2):—Ine, c. 18, title: Be eirlisceum ðæofe gefunge-
num; Ine, c. 20, title: Be sceorran cenumnum men butan wege
gemeton [MS. H.: gemetum].

DSN. (2):—Ælfred, c. 10, title: Be twel файndes monnes
wife forlegenum; Ælfred, c. 9, title: Be bearneacnum wife
ofslocten [MS. B: Be ðam ðæt man ofslea wif mid cilde].

ASM (1):—Ælfred, c. 35, § 4: Gif he hine to preoste
bescire unbundenne.

II. With an Object (0).

No example.

**BENEDICT** (72).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (63).

I. Without an Object (25).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
appositive participle (12):—

NSM. (3):—2. 18: and ðus aesiende cywðæ = 4. 21: Et
quaerens Dominus ... iterum dicit.—Other examples:—
47. 16: arisende = 88. 17: surgentes; 52. 9: wuniende mid
upafelednesse = 98. 2: elatus.

NPM. (9):—47. 12: hy butan eleunge arisende caslice
gehwyle oðerne forestæppe and to ðam Godes weorce esste =
88. 13: absque mora surgentes festinent.—Other examples:—
62. 15\textsuperscript{b}: drincende = 118. 2: bibentibus; 62. 15\textsuperscript{b}: etende = 118. 1: comedentibus; 134. 17*: libbende = 231. 8: victantes; 135. 23\textsuperscript{b}*: sittende = 231. 36: sedentes; 138. 2*: surheuniende = 233. 22: persistentes; wuniende (fram) = remoti, 134. 18* = 231. 11; = stantes, 135. 23\textsuperscript{a*} = 231. 35; 137. 14*: wyrcende = 233. 6: operantes.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or in immediate connection with an appositive participle (3):

NSM. (2):—133. 13: Swa hwyle swa onettende est to sam heofonlican eðle, gefreme ærest = 206. 11: Quisquis ergo ad patriam coelestem festinas... perfice; 68. 14: hreou-sigende = 128. 20: pavilat.

NPM. (1):—68. 21: wen is, ðet sume oððe sleadice lagon and slepon, oððe sittende mid idelre spellunge deofle to micelne forwyrdes intingan gesealden = 130. 4: erit forte talis qui se aut recollocet et dormiat, ant certe sedeat sibi foris, vel fabulis vacet, et detur occasio maligno.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin ablative of manner or of means (1):

NSM. (1):—71. 7: butan he ðerrihte beforan callum hine dælbetende geaðmede = 134. 15: nisi satisfactione ibi coram omnibus humiliatus fuerit.


5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):

NPM. (1):—9. 7: geleorninð ðæt hie anstandonde... ongean deofol... winnan magan = 14. 4: et beni instructi... jam sine consolatione alterius... contra vitia pugnare sufficient.

*All starred references are to the Appendix of Benedict\textsuperscript{1}. 

THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 183
6. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (7):

NSM. (4):—31. 14: *geomricende clypude = 58. 13; 24. 6: *smægende gehealde = 46. 24; 4. 15*: *tremegende = 8. 21;
60. 1: *cweðe . . . *Sanciende = 112. 3.

NPM. (3):—132. 1: *betende = 204. 3; 2. 10: *elicende = 4. 15; 135. 6: *swiındende = 231. 20.

II. With an Object (38).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (25):


NSF. (1):—2. 9: *sio godenende steðu myngað and *clypað, ðus *cweðende = 4. 14: *divina quotidie clamans quid nos admonet vox *dicens.


NPM. (10):—64. 13: we ðæah manna untrunnesse and tydernessse *bessewænde gelyfað, ðæt etc. = 122. 5: Tamen insirnorum *conuenta imbecillitatem, credimus.—Other examples: 134. 24*: *aseyriende = 231. 16: *remoti; 135. 27*: *begylende = 232. 2: captantes; 59. 21: *biddende = 112. 2: postulantes; 4. 3: *cliende = 8. 10: *dicentes; 70. 7: *clypiende = 132. 14: *dicens; 3. 14: *cweðende = 6. 17: *dicentes; 11. 8: *forhagende = 18. 21: *contemnentes; 27. 22: *gefyllende = 54. 5: *adimplentes; 87. 5: *seegende = 154. 7: *dicens.
2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb generally is subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (7):—

NSM. (6):—25. 10: 
2. 3: dicat; 
8: 
8; ib. = dicit, 51. 14 = 96. 9; ib. = dicant, 82. 24 (Wells Fragment) = 152. 5.

NSN. (1):—22. 10: 
3. 12: clamat.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—

NPM. (1):—134. 13*: \(\text{Se westestowa and æketu and anwunung gelufiað gejenlæcende Elian etc.} = 231. 6: \text{ad imitationem scilicet Eliae.}

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin equivalent (5):—

NSM. (2):—4. 10: 
4. 16; 101. 6: 
166. 16.

NPM. (3):—131. 15: 
204. 1; 6. 1: 
233. 27.

**B.**—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (9).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (8).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):—

NSM. (2):—2. 3: 
28. 2: 
7. 54.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerundive (1):—

NSM. (1):—34. 2: \(\text{æfter ðam fylige capitel of ðæra apostola lare gemyndelice butan bec gesæd} = 64. 7: \text{Lectio sequatur, ex corde rectitanda.}

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):—
NPM. (2):—44. 22\(^a\&b\): eala séar we asolecene and avacode on aure wucan gehæsten = 82. 26: quod nos tepidi utinam sepimana integra persolvamus.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin equivalent (3):—
NSM. (1):—28. 6: geneadod = 54. 9 (cf. 28. 2, where geneadod = angariati).
NPM. (2):—11. 16\(^a\&b\): getrymede and anbryrde = 20. 5.

II. With an Object (1).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):—
DPM. (1):—25. 16: and nu fram ðam englum us betehtum ure weore . . . beoð gebodude = 50. 13: et ab Angelis nobis deputatis . . . opera nostra nuntiantur.

THE BLICKLING HOMILIES (52).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (36).

I. Without an Object (27).

NSM. (10):—235. 12: Ond ðus cwæđende se halga Andreas assette his heafod ofer ærne his discipula & he onslep.—Other examples:—133. 17: cumende; 193. 8: dwolgende; 249. 20: efsende (or pred.?); 113. 29: gnorngende (by Flamme classed as pred. (§ 169), by Morris translated as appos.); 179. 20: leogende; lociende: 229. 28, 245. 8, 245. 16; 231. 9: ðurhwejigende.

NSF. (5):—5. 8\(^a\&b\): Gehyron we nu to hwylem gemete seo arwyrdæ fremme & seo halige, on hire cantice gefeondæ and blissigende, sang & ðus cwæð.—7. 16: ðæt Maria . . . smeadæ & swigende ðohite hwæt seo halettung wære. [Flamme (§ 169. 2) classes swigende as pred.; but Morris correctly translates: "and silently considered." Swigende may be considered an adverb.] 249. 1\(^a\&b\): hrymende, wependæ.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 187

NSN. (1):—199. 17: Da wæs he mid yrre swīðlice onstyred, forðon ǣe hit [= hryðær] swa wedende eode, & swa ofermodlice ferde. [Flamme (§ 169) classes wedende as pred.; but Morris correctly translates: "because it had gone about so madly and had behaved so arrogantly." Clearly wedende is coordinate with ofermodlice, and may like it be classed as an adverb.]

NPM. (5):—225. 17: cumað arisende wulfas, todriðað ðine heorde.—Other examples: —geheonde: 201. 10, 203. 2 (or pred. ?), 207. 8 (or pred. ?); 239. 27: ingangende.

NPN. (1):—243. 5: and ingangende on ðæt carcern hie [= ða deoflu] gestodon on gesihde ðæs eadigan Andreas.

DSM. (2):—115. 18* : we him fleondum fylgeðað.—245. 3: ðæs gebiddende ðæm halgan Andrea Drihtnes stefn wæs geworden on Ebreisc, eWedende.

DPM. (2):—171. 11* & b: swa him Drihten Crist, eallum rihtgelyfdum mannum wunigendum for his noman, & ðurhwuniggendum in tintregum on sóðre andetnesse ðæ ende his lifes untweogendlice, gehæt & eWedæ.

ASM. (1):—115. 18b: & hine feallendne lufiðað.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (9).

NSM. (4):—239. 22: he geset be ðam swere anbidende hwæt him gelímpan seolde (or pred. ?); 249. 17* & b: he ðær wunode mid him seofon dagas, lærende and strangende hira heortan on geleafan . . . Cristes.—57. 7: spiwende.

NSF. (2):—eweðende : 229. 27, 245. 4.

NPM. (1):—133. 27: Swylce is gecewden ðæt hie calle on yppan wunedon, ðonen bidende ðæs Halgan Gastes.

NPN. (1):—243. 7: hie [= ða deoflu] gestodon on gesihde ðæs eadigan Andreas, and hine bismriðende mid myclere bismre, and hie ewedon.

ASM. (1):—215. 21: eweðendne.

119213
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (16).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (15).

NSM. (4):—89. 34b: raðe he lifgende ut eode of his byrgenne mid his agenre mihte aweht.—87. 36: & befealden to Hælendes eneowum he cweð.—Other examples:—187. 28: gebeagod; 225. 33: getryned.

NSF. (1):—197. 20: Æonne is ðær on neaweste sum swiðe mære burh betwih ðære seo seo is nemned Adriaticus on ðæm munte Garganus geseted se is haten Sepontus.

NPM. (5):—85. 9: Hie ða swiðe forhte & abregde ðus cwædon.—Other examples:—221. 28a: gegyrde; 221. 28a: gescelgdode; 221. 28b: geseorode; 171. 28: geweorðode.

NPF. (1):—209. 36: he geseah ðæt on ðæm clife hangodan on ðæm is gæn bearwum manige sweorte saula be heora handun gebundne. [Flamme (§ 174. 2) says this wavers between appos. and pred.]

NPN. (1):—127. 33: Swylce eac syndon on ðære myclan cirican ehta eagðyrelu swiðe mycele of glæse geworht. [Flamme (§ 173) thinks that geworht is possibly predicative, but Morris translates it as appositive.]

ASM. (2):—11. 7: Arweordian we Crist on binne asetene; 181. 1: beheafddodne.

APF. (1):—31. 20: ðas dæda ðus gedone from Drihtne (but the text is corrupt).

II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

DSF. (1):—197. 6: se ðe is on ealra ymbhwyrfte to weordienne & to wuldrienne his cirican, gehweðer ge his agen geweore ge on his naman gehalgod (but the passage is corrupt).

Note.—The text is too corrupt to construe ahafen in 115. 32.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 189

ÆLFRIC’S HOMILIES,* THORPE (676).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (477).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (203).

NSM. (90) — II. 78b: se sceæna on hine gelyfende his synna geanadette. So: I. 62b1; II. 130a6. — II. 132b1 & 2: se biscopt, seininge on . . . geearnungum and . . . geðineðum, on heofesan rice, mid Ælm Sc. on eere blisse rixiende wuldrað. So seininge: I. 466a; II. 352a2, 502b1.—Other examples: I. 386a2: andþidigende; I. 390b3: arisende; I. 226a: astingende; II. 136a: awegferende; II. 176b1: bifingende; blissigende. I. 340a1 & 2, 580b, 596a4 & 5, II. 426a; II. 300b1: byrnende; I. 516b: cumicigende; I. 124b: dædbetende; drohtni(g)ende: I. 398b, II. 546b1; II. 82b: ehtende; fænigende: I. 596a1, II. 312a3; II. 442b: jarende; feallende: I. 380b2, 390b2; forhtigende: II. 40b, 142b2, 176b2; forðstarppende: I. 278a, 500a2; II. 90a1; II. 360b: fimtidigende; II. 176a4: gesonende; I. 56b1: geritende; I. 410a: gyddigende; II. 246a1; hajiligende; hangi(g)ende: I. 594a1, 596b8, II. 256a, 260b; I. 380b3: hroesende; II. 302a: hrymende (or pred.2)?; II. 152b1: liegende; II. 474b: lutiende; lybbende: II. 152b2, 364b1, 500a2, 502b2; I. 54b: miltsigende; II. 182a2: onbesonende; II. 134a: plegyende; I. 294b: roerdigende; sittende: I. 346a1, 548b, II. 134b2, 382b1; II. 500a1: smecagende; II. 138a2: standende; suwi(g)ende: II. 230a, 350a2; I. 480b: swoetende; I. 338b2: syngigende; I. 596b7: tihende; truwi(g)ende: I. 2b, II. 478a1; I. 374a: ðoctende; II. 168a3: ðruwigungende; II. 204b1: ðurhæwigungende; II. 130a3: undertone; II. 140b3: unforhtigende; II. 164b: wedende; I. 52b: wælwillinge (or adverb2); wæpente: II. 134b; wrihtende: II. 332b1, 348a1; wænigende: I. 134a, 150a2 & 3, 232a, 326b, 346a2, II. 142b3, 440a, 498b1; I. 432a: yrisinge.

* The superior letters (a and b) refer respectively to the top and the bottom of the page; the superior figures distinguish the several examples.
MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.

NSF. (11):—i. 438b 1& 2: heo drohtnode gemænelic mid čam apostolicum werode, infarende and utfarende betwux him.—Other examples:—i. 98a 2: donde; i. 146b: lybbende; i. 66b 1: varigende; i. 440a 1: smeagende; i. 564a 2: utflowende; wepende: i. 566b 1, ii. 146b; ii. 434b: writende; ii. 182b 4: wunigende.

NSN. (7):—i. 372b 2: Đæt folc ᵗa mid anre stemne elypigende owa. So: i. 594b 2.—Other examples:—i. 566b 2: blissigende; ii. 140a 3: bræstligende; ii. 450b: hroesende; ii. 142b 1: sproecende; i. 296b: wunigende.

NS. M. or F. (2):—i. 546b 1& 2: fyligilde heap... manna... Sürhwunigende, to Criste gesodende.

NS. F. or N. (1):—i. 324b 1: gecynd... wunigende.

NPM. (62):—i. 610a 2& 3: Sind æac sume stœrran leot-beamede, færlice arisende and hraedlice gewitende.—i. 592b 1& 2: Æer ge symle Blissia, blowende and mid Criste rixigende. So rixigende in i. 500b.—Other examples: i. 534b: bid-dende; blissigende: i. 56b 4, 564b; ii. 258b: bugende; i. 596b 4: elypigende; ii. 454a 1: oumende; i. 68b: dæabetende; drohtnode; i. 536b, ii. 158b 2, 296b 2, 404b; dueligenende: i. 340b, ii. 124b; feallende: i. 38b, 560a 2, ii. 126b, 214b, 236b, 246b 1; ii. 34a 2: feohtende; ii. 334a 1: fleogende; i. 352a: forståpeppende; ii. 130b 1: gelyfende; i. 46b: hrymende; ii. 138a 3: liegende; i. 544b 2: lutigende; ii. 130a 4: lybbende; milligende: i. 370b, 540b; i. 78b 2: niSerfeallende; scinende: ii. 136b 1, 496b; ii. 606a 3: singende; spreecende: ii. 248b, 284a 2; ii. 136a 2: stymende; ii. 212b: suwininge; sveltende: ii. 34a 3, 554b; i. 496b 2: synigende; i. 606b 1: tacevende: i. 606b 2: tihtende; i. 84a 1: upaspringende; i. 334a 3: væddigen; wedende: i. 50b 1, 470b, ii. 232b; ii. 454b 2: wepenge; wunigende: i. 150a 3, 228b 2, 238b, 338b (cf. Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 11), 406b 2, 544b 1, 610b, ii. 204b 2; ii. 236b: yrigende.

NP. N. (2):—ii. 336b: ᵗa deoflu feohtende sceton heora fyrenan flan ongean ᵗa sawle;—ii. 350b 3: hlithende.

NP. M. or N. (1):—i. 60a 1: wers and wif... fagnigende.
GPM. (2):—i. 30b²: wearS gesewen micel menigu heofon-
lizes werodes God herigendra and singendra (or substan-
tive?). So: i. 38a²

DSM. (4):—i. 494a: and elygendum Drihtne to ðam
ecan life caoffice geandwyrt (or Abs.? Cf. Abs. Ptc. in A.-S.,
p. 10).—i. 324b³: to ðam geleaffullan heape, on ðysre worulde
wunigende.—Other examples:—i. 362a: cumendum (or Abs.? 
Cf. Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 10); ii. 180b¹: ridendum.

DPM. (6):—ii. 186b²: cyðde his forðsið on ær sumum
his learning-cniihtum mid him drohtnigendum and sumum
ðœrum on fyrlenum stowum wunigendum.—Other examples:—
gelyfendum: i. 228a, II. 284a; i. 440a²: onlociendum; II.
284a: sprecendum.

DDM. (1):—ii. 172b²: ne æteowode ic inc bam slapendum?
ASM. (4):—ii. 418b³, 4, 5: underfoh me nu behrewiende,
ðone ðe ðu ðið ðis andigendne and tælendne forbære; i.
496b¹: lutigende.

ASF. (2):—i. 376a: se dry worhtce ða æere nøddran,
styrigende swylce heo cæu wære; II. 344a²: byrnende.

ASN. (2):—ii. 508b¹: cwað ðet he hit [= treow] under-
fenge feallende to foldan.—II. 150a: licgende.

APM. (4):—II. 246b⁴: feallende; i. 334b¹: licgende; II.
154a: lybbende; II. 242b²: sittende.

APF. (2):—ii. 350b²: ða deoflu gelæddon ðif manna
sawla, herowlice gnorniende and grimetende, into ðam fyre.

2. With an Object (274).

NSM. (176):—ii. 142a: Ða begann se wer dreorig wepan,
andæigende ðæs ungelimpes.—II. 188a: stod sum arwurðe
wer mid . . . gyrlæm, axigende etc.—II. 164a²: Benedictus
. . . tæhte him ðæs dædbote, bebeodende ðet etc.—i. 372b¹: Se
apostol genealæhte ðam lice mid adenedum earrum, ðas
biddende. So: i. 126a, 418b¹, 428a¹ (w. gen.), 434b (ib.),
452a (ib.), 456b, 464b¹, 598a³, II. 26a, 110b, 134b³, 138a,
144b², 180b², 304a², 304b, 418a¹, 498b² (w. gen.), 504b².—i.
62a: Johannes besahSus cveðende (cveðende). So: I. 50b2,
66b3, 78b1 & 5, 88b, 98a1, 120b & b, 124b, 126b, 192b, 206a, 208b,
222b, 242a, 264a, 294a, 314b, 324b2, 328b, 350b, 358a1 & 2, 364a,
366b, 370b, 376b, 380a, 380b1, 390b, 390b1, 404b, 406b1, 418b2,
430b, 436b, 442b, 450b, 480b, 482b, 502b2, 510b2, 520b
(=dicens), 522b & b, 530a, 534b, 538b1, 548b, 550b2, 560b3,
568b1 & 2, 568b2, 570b, 572b2, 576b, 596a3, 600b1, 604b, 606b,
610b4; II. 10b, 12b, 14b, 16b, 34b4, 52b, 62b2, 72b, 84b1, 112b1 & 2,
182b1, 266b, 288b, 312b1, 328b, 384b, 400b1, 406b, 414b2, 418b2,
428b, 428b, 432b, 464b, 468a1, 538b, 542b, 562b, 576b.—Other
examples:—II. 540b1: besuende; bidende: I. 298b, 408b,
II. 184b1: blissigende; bodi(g)ende: I. 370b1, 560b1, II. 130b1;
II. 141b1: bysmirgende (w. dat.); I. 48a: clypigende; I. 66a2:
ferigende; II. 446b2: forbugende; II. 130a2: forhøgende; II.
168a1: forhøgende; II. 352a3: fylgende (w. dat.); II. 418b1 & 2:
ggefoøende; I. 78a2: gehørende; II. 376b1 & 2: gætænigende;
høbbende: I. 126b, 130a2; II. 432b: hørigende; levende: I.
370b2, 596a2; I. 400b1: livende; I. 600b2: manigende; II.
320b: ofserseawigende; II. 446b1: ondraæende; I. 508b:
onstandende (should be on standende?); reæende: II. 350b1,
356b; I. 388b: sawende (or pred. ?); seæawigende: II. 32a2,
120b3; seæende: I. 338b1 (or pred. ?), II. 358b2, 418b; I. 596b2:
seægende; I. 388b1: seænde; II. 138b1: syngende; II. 334b:
sæægende; II. 182b3: sæærigende; sææelinige: II. 400b2,
466b; I. 540b2: læne; lææende: I. 528a1, II. 328b; II. 326b1:
ææpligende; læææende: I. 322b (w. dat.), II. 338b, 344b1; I.
106b: læææende; II. 128b: læøææende (w. dat.); læøææende:
II. 170b, 256a2; I. 608a1: underyææende; II. 346b2: wiææi-
gende (w. gen.); wriææende: II. 272b3, 364b2; I. 572b1: wyæ-
ææende.

NSF. (16):—II. 76b: Seo endlyfte tid bið seo forærøder ealdnyss.
Sam deaðe geneæææende.—Other examples:—arøn-
ni(g)ende: I. 30b3, 42b1 & 2; biddende: I. 66b2, 566b2, II. 184a1;
cveðende: I. 104b, 194b, 388b2, 426b3, II. 42b, 432b2; heøe-
nigende: I. 438b (w. dat.), 440b2 (ib.).—I. 98a3: ondraæende;
II. 182b3: seæææende.
NSN. (8):—π. 578b: folc ham gewende, ṣancigende ȝæm Ælmithtigan ealra his goda.—Other examples:—biddende: i. 68a³, π. 140b²; cwēgende: i. 200a, 594b³, π. 110a, 114a; π. 256b: swægende.

NS. M. or N. (1):—π. 342a: sang . . . cwēgende etc.

NPM. (61):—i. 38a³: hi . . . godum mamum sibbe bodedon, swutellice atrowiende ȝæt etc.—Other examples:—π. 200b: anbidigende (w. gen.); π. 548a: andswæriende; befrincende: i. 78a, 104a (= dicentes); biddende: i. 74a, 562b, π. 30b², 160b², 176a, 396b, 484a, 486b; π. 252b¹: bigende; bodigende: π. 492b¹; π. 506a: clypigende; cwēgende: i. 4a, 64a, 68b², 510b¹ (= dicentes), 538b⁴, 560b³, 596b⁵, π. 112b³, 172b¹, 252b², 300b, 484b, 488a¹; π. 168b²: cyōgende; π. 534b²: drincende; π. 492b³: dwelingende (or pred.?); π. 534b¹: etende; i. 588b: ferigende; i. 526b: gadrigende; π. 226b: geuenlæcende; π. 560a³: gehyrsumigende (w. dat.); i. 90b: habbende; healdende: i. 528a², 538b³; herigende: i. 32a², 42b⁴; π. 474a: leasetende (or pred.).?; maerigende: i. 544b², π. 194b, π. 248b²: meldigende; π. 34a¹: oferswiȝende; π. 490b²: onlihtende; π. 248a: sleænde; i. 426b¹: swingende; ṣancigende (w. dat. and gen.): i. 102a, 606b⁴, π. 272b¹; swævigende (w. dat.): π. 70b, 310a; π. 250b¹: wre-gende; wuldigende: i. 32a, 42b³; π. 130a³: wundrigende (w. gen.); π. 490b¹: wyrcende.

NPN. (4):—π. 56b: Æt ȝæm giftum waeron gesette six stenene waertefatu, healdende ænlipige twyfealde gemetu Ȝðseq eðre cytan, single deo Feenlicene sang (or pred.?);—cwēgende: π. 414b³, 416b².

NP. M. or N. (1):—i. 60b²: weras and wif . . . cwēende.

GP. (2):—i. 30b¹: wearā gesewen micel menighe Feo-no-lis werodes God herigendra. So: i. 38a¹.

DPM. (1):—π. 440b¹: swa swa he behet eallum him ðeniendum.

APM. (4):—i. 334b²: Manega Lazaras ge habbað nu liegende æt eowrum gatum, biddende eowre oferflowend-
nyss. So: II. 330a.—Other examples:—I. 28*: bodigende; I. 296*: ewende.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (199).

I. Without an Object (194).

NSM. (94):—II. 182a¹: he ða ðearle abliged aweg tengde.
—I. 10a: ðeðos ðyrnys is an God; ðæt is se ðæder and his wisdom of him sylfum æfre acceeded. So: I. 34b, 150b¹, 222a, 278b², 464b², 500a¹, II. 42b³, 204b³, 366a.—Other examples:—II. 352a¹: asylled; II. 510b: asyrht (or pred.?); I. 550a¹: ahafen; ahangen: II. 598b, 606b; astreht: I. 426b², II. 186b³; II. 332b³: aðelope; I. 434a²: awed; II. 254b: awend; I. 598b: aworan; II. 120b¹: befangen; I. 426b²: brefinen; I. 56b²: bewæsfd; II. 382b³: fornumen; I. 66a¹: forsæyldigod; II. 424a: fulfremed; I. 594b¹: geæbyligd; I. 414b²: geancumod; II. 250a²: gebolgen; gebyl: II. 390b, 412b²: gedrefed; I. 414b¹; II. 140a¹: gelogen; gebrætwed: II. 118b; II. 306a¹: gefultod; I. 52b²: gefultumod; geglen(c)g(e)d: II. 512b², 518b²; II. 130b²: gehadod; II. 244a: gehaldgod; gehaten: I. 502b, II. 152a², 304b¹, 308a¹, 332b², 348a², 412b¹, 488a²; gehathyrt: II. 374b, 424b; II. 250b²: gelædd; gelaðod: I. 128a, II. 54b; II. 270b: gelifæst; II. 250b¹: gelodgod; gelysed: II. 152a¹, 332a⁴; I. 468b²: gemartyrod; II. 158b¹: gemenged; II. 348a³: gemetgod; I. 588b: geneadod; II. 24b: geripod; II. 42b²: gescapen; gescryd(d): I. 528b, 578b (or pred.?); II. 312b³, 382b², 512b¹; gesell(): I. 126b³, 130a¹, 218a¹; II. 234b: gesworen; I. 428b: getogen; I. 614b: gedread; II. 36b: geswungen; II. 516b²: gewæct; geweact; II. 450b², II. 334a², 502a: geworht: I. 278b¹, II. 42b¹; I. 426b¹: gewreged; II. 518b: gewuldrod; I. 52a¹: oforstod; II. 150b; onbryrd: I. 290a: rihtgelyfed; II. 514b: toswollen; II. 372a: unabeden; II. 204a¹: unbegunnen; I. 428a²: ungeaxod; II. 336b: ungederod; II. 204a²: ungeendod.

NSF. (14):—II. 546b³, 548a¹: Hire modor, Redempta gehaten, stod hire ofer, micelum asyrht for ðam heofonlican
leohce. So gehaten: II. 284\textsuperscript{a}, 306\textsuperscript{a}, 584\textsuperscript{a}.—Other examples:

—I. 446\textsuperscript{a}: ahafen; II. 58\textsuperscript{a}: astreht; I. 502\textsuperscript{b}: a\textsuperscript{a}rawen; I. 60\textsuperscript{a}: awreht; II. 90\textsuperscript{a}: forstredene; II. 138\textsuperscript{b}: gela\textsuperscript{a}god; II. 308\textsuperscript{b}: getintregod; II. 498\textsuperscript{a}: geworht; II. 586\textsuperscript{b}: ymbsercyl (or pred.?).

NSN. (16):—I. 184\textsuperscript{b1}, 2: ßa ßif hla\textsuperscript{a}fas wæron swylce hit sæd wære, na on eor\textsuperscript{a}San besawen, ac gemenigfyld fram ßam ße eor\textsuperscript{a}San geworhte.—Other examples:—II. 572\textsuperscript{a}: afyrht; II. 494\textsuperscript{b1}, 2: agoten; I. 352\textsuperscript{b}: beclysed; II. 140\textsuperscript{a}: bepeht; II. 326\textsuperscript{b2}: forseryldgod; II. 272\textsuperscript{b2}: geblodgod; gehaten: II. 312\textsuperscript{b2}, 438\textsuperscript{a}; I. 508\textsuperscript{b2}: gescryld; I. 508\textsuperscript{b1}: gesett; II. 510\textsuperscript{b3}: geðuht; II. 140\textsuperscript{b1}: ofscamod; II. 510\textsuperscript{b2}: toslopen.

NS. F. or N. (1):—I. 42\textsuperscript{b4}: gemynyd ... gesweutelod.

NPM. (20):—I. 608\textsuperscript{a}: ßæt we huru his genealæcendan dom, mid mislicum swinglin um afverde, ondraedon.—Other examples:—II. 326\textsuperscript{b2}: acennede; I. 98\textsuperscript{a}4: acsycrede; asende: I. 348\textsuperscript{a1}, 2, 540\textsuperscript{a}; I. 560\textsuperscript{b1}: fordemde; fornumene: II. 246\textsuperscript{b2}, 348\textsuperscript{b}; I. 84\textsuperscript{a2}: foersodene; I. 566\textsuperscript{a1}: gedrehte; I. 298\textsuperscript{b}: geglengede; I. 504\textsuperscript{b}: gelærde; I. 10\textsuperscript{a}: gesceapene; I. 538\textsuperscript{b2}: gescrydde; II. 396\textsuperscript{b4}: gewehte; II. 246\textsuperscript{b3}: gewepnode; I. 526\textsuperscript{b}: gewriðene; I. 544\textsuperscript{b4}: gewu\textsuperscript{n}ode; I. 610\textsuperscript{a}: leoh-beamele.

NPF. (3):—II. 174\textsuperscript{a}: Twa mynceenna wæron droht-nigende on gehendnyse his mynstræs of ægelborene megðe asprungene.—Other examples:—I. 366\textsuperscript{b}: bepehte; II. 298\textsuperscript{b}: geendode.

NPN. (3):—II. 380\textsuperscript{a}: deo\textsuperscript{f}lu, ße feollon to his fotum, mid fyrhte fornumene (or pred.?).—II. 326\textsuperscript{a1}: comon cewelbære deo\textsuperscript{f}lu swaltetlice gesewe, on sweartum hiwe, in to ßam cilde.—II. 354\textsuperscript{b}: He befran ßa hwam ßa geb\textsuperscript{y}tlu gemynyte wæron, swa mællice getimbrole.

GPM. (1):—II. 290\textsuperscript{a}: gelaðunge gecorenra manna to ßam ecan life.

DSM. (2):—II. 546\textsuperscript{a}: G. awrat be sumum geðyldigan were, Stephanus gehaten.—II. 308\textsuperscript{b2}: æt foran ßam casere, Aurelianus genamod.
DSF. (2):—Π. 494α: becomon to anre heafodbyrig, Suainir gehaten;—Π. 546β: be sumere myneceyne, Romula gehaten.

DPM. (1):—Π. 286β: Sume gecwemdon englum on heora gesthusum understafangenum Sūrð culmliðnyss.

ASM. (21):—Π. 596β, 2, 3: Ic gelyfe on ænne Crist, Hælend Drihten, Æone ancenedan Godes Sonu, of Æam Fæder aceaned ær calle warulda, God of Gode, Leoth of Leothte, Æoðne God of Soðum Gode, aceanedne na geworthne. So aceanedne: i. 198α.—Π. 168α: asende his swurdboran, Riggo gehaten (sic!). So gehaten = an accusative: Π. 358α, 468α (= eo nomine), 480β, 492β.—Π. 162β: asende him ænne focan to lace mid attre gemencged.

— Other examples:—II. 112β: befangenne; Π. 598β: forlorenne; Π. 280α: gebædne; Π. 252α: geigedne; Π. 120α: geendebyrdne; i. 210α: gefreatevodne; i. 330β: geglencgedne; Π. 416β: gehæflene; gescyrıdıne: Π. 168α, 500β.

ASF. (2):—Π. 182α: se halga wer hæfde ane swustor, Scolastica gehaten; Π. 124α: afandode.

ASN. (7):—Π. 264α: Ne ete ge of Æam lambe nan Æing hrew, ne on wætere gesoden, ac gebæld to fyre. So gesoden: Π. 278β.—Other examples:—Π. 260β: gedaced; Π. 198β: gefadod; i. 42α: gehalgod; i. 134β: gelacod; i. 42α: gewemmed.

APM. (3):—Π. 516β: oðræ hwam betæhestå su us nu forlætene?—Other examples:—Π. 486β: gedræhte; i. 568β: gescrydde.

APF. (3):—i. 68α: ge begeaton eow Æesterfullu wununga mid dracen afylled, and ... mid ... witum afylledæ. — i. 506α: Æa gesawon hi ætforan Æere cyrcan norðêra, on Æam marmanstanæ, swilce mannes fôteasta festeæc on Æam stane geðyle. [Though Sweet and others give folæst as masculine only, it seems to be feminine here. See, too, i. 508α.]

APN. (1):—i. 218α: se sacerd bletsian sceele palmtwigu and hi swa gebletسود Æam folce deiæn.
II. With an Object (5).

NSN. (1):—I. 594\(a^2\): ðu ceaf, ecum ontendnyssum ge-

gearcod, gehyr me.

NPM. (1):—I. 544\(b^3\): deorum geferlehte, to engelicum

spræcum gewunode, on micclum wundrum seinende waren.

NPN. (1):—II. 314\(b\): manega sind beboda mannum gesette

(or pred. ?).

GSF. (1):—II. 292\(b\): tihð ðurh miltsunge him forgufewe

mihte (or Abs. Dat. ? See Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 11).

APM. (1):—II. 598\(b^1\): gescyld ðine ðeowan ðinum mæ-
gendrymme underseodde.

Note: Latin Participles occur as follows :—(1) untranslated:

credentes, persuadentes, secuti, in Pref. to I.; (2) translated:
dicens (diventes) = sweðende, I. 510\(b^1\), 520\(a\) = befrinende in I.

104\(b\);—raptum = se wæs gegripen, II. 332\(b\);—circumdata =
ymscryd, II. 586\(b\).

ÆLFRIC'S LIVES OF SAINTS (543).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (335).

I. Without an Object (129).

NSM. (54):—442. 24: com se arwurða swyðun to sumnum

... smyðe on swenef æteowiende wurðlice geglenged.—

xxviii. 6: Se casere wæs cene and reðe and deofolgild

beode dwollice lifbende.—482. 182: he sona weard hal

beorhte locigende se ðe blind wæs.—Other examples:—478.

92: blyssigende; xxiii. B. 199\(b\): cyphigende; 156. 134:

drohtnigende; xxiii. B. 640: efteyrrende; 448. 100: fregni-
gende;—feallende: 396. 222, xxviii. 114; 282. 5: feohtende

[sic]; xxiii. B. 199\(b\): forðgangende; 14. 77: forðsteppende;

xxiii. B. 645: geðrystlæcende;—hangi(g)ende: 428. 212,

227, xxix. 254; xxiii. B. 733: hawingende; heofende:

xxx. 180; xxiii. B. 366: hlihhende; 526. 617: hlydende;


NSN. (5):—78. 468: wunode an mæden mærlice droht-nigende geund feowertig geare fec fægre gehealden.—Other examples:—xxvi. 159: feallende; 88. 652: flitende; 184. 242: græmende; 44. 327: wunigende.

NPM. (17):—98. 154: ða eodon ða hæðengyldan into heora temple ðlypigende hlude to þam leasan gode.—226. 110: ðæ clypodon ðer ðry weras wunigende æt þæm geate.— Other examples:—438. 99: blyssigende; 514. 445: dreori-
gende; 192. 379: drohtniende; xxiii. B. 115: geroordende; 110. 338¹: glutniende; 240. 18: libbende; ligende: 54. 62, xxv. 496; xxv. 513: ridende; 326. 83: sprecende; xxv. 779: standende; 326. 100: ñangegende; 94. 77: ñeonde; xxvi. 186: wundrigende; 70. 330: wunigende.

NPN. (4)—224. 86¹²: binnan ñam væron calle cuce nytem creopende and gangande (or pred.?).—Other examples:—xxvii. 39: dynigende; xxiv. 53: grýmetende.

DSM. (2)—14. 79: Nis nanum meny on . . . life libbendum names singes swa mycel neod.—xxiii. B. 673: ðús mid tearum biddende, him eft ðær ñeane on befeoll ðús cwe-ñende. [I omit he after ðús, as does Skeat’s “B.”]

DSF. (3)—212. 40: forgif me ña to chënnysse to eriste ñarende.—xxiii. B. 752: geic eac gebidden ñeathwæðere for me of ñyssere worulde hleorende on ñam monide etc.;—36. 185: liegendre.

ASM. (2)—78. 489: gelædde hine on merngen for ña ðwiðe fægres hiwes buton æbelum womme and wel sprecande;—78. 481²: unsprecende.

ASF. (2)—334. 216: Se sang geswtelæ ña halgan ñrynyssse on ænre godecundyssse æfre wunigende; ib. xxix. 5 (?) .

APM. (3)—388. 80: se cyning sende swyðe fela ærendracan to . . . earðum embe ðe æxìende.—Other examples:—xxx. 429: gebiddende (or pred.?); 32. 130: liegende.

II. With an Object (206).

NSM. (114)—xxvi. 137¹²: he ñærßiinan wunode godes lof arærende and gerihtloence ñet folc.—xxiii. B. 96: ñas weore Zosimus behealdende hine sylfne geornlice to fulfremedyssse æden[æ] gemang ñam ennwyrtum. Sô : xxx. 233.—60. 166: [he] com to basilie biddende fulluhtes. —62. 193: ða asende se ealdorman sôna to basilie, biddende, earmlice ñet etc.—78. 487: ac se bisceop . . . wacode ealle ña niht mid ñam vædlia hreolian, biddende ñone hælend
THE APPOSOITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 201


NSN. (5):—xxiii. B. 595: ac godes word is euu and searp, innan lorenede ðis mennice andgyt.—Other examples:—biddende: 60. 171, xxv. 716; xxiii. B. 324: cwefende; xxiii. B. 287: hebbende (= reducens).

NPM. (44):—472. 9: gebugon to fulluhte behrevosigende heora synna.—Other examples:—biddende (w. g. or ac.): 46. 357 (?), 70. 334, 138. 352, 240. 40, 242. 75, 400. 258, 448. 121, 452. 188; xxv. 336, 768; xxix. 172; xxvi. 79: bodigende; 136. 305: epyi(g)ende; cwefende: xxx. 140, 281, 425; xxix. 192: eyfende; xxvi. 238: feccende; xxviii. 10: folgiende (w. dat.); xxiii. B. 139: gefylgende; gescende: xxiii. B. 377, xxx. 184; 148. 24: halsigende; heri[g]ende: 70. 349 (or pred.?), 102. 222, 110. 338, 351, 142. 403; morsigende: 26. 37, 230. 162, 242. 51 (or pred.?); xxv. 495: sceotiende; 54. 56: secende (or pred.?); seegende: 146. 458, xxv. 121; ðancil(g)ende (w. dat. & gen.): 114. 410, 132. 249, 435. 85, 460. 322, 478. 96, xxv. 453; 80. 526: wuldrigende; 184. 249: wurgende.

NP. F. or M. (1):—224. 66: wydewan and ðearfan... æteowigende.

GSF. (1):—xxiii. B. 426: ða onhran soðlice min mod and ða eagan minre heortan hælo andgit mid me sylfre
Sencende sæt me ðone ingang belucen ða onfeormeganda (sic) minra misdéda (but, as is evident, the text is very corrupt).

DSM. (3):—xxiii. B. 246: Æa forgeaf heo Zosime and-swarigende Amen. [The text seems corrupt. Skeat translates: "Then she gave Zosimus [her blessing, he] answering 'Amen.'"]—xxiii. B. 674: ðás mid tearum biddende, him eft ðær geðanc on becâll, ðás eædende. [I here follow Skeat's "B" and omit he after ðús.]-82. 540: Se wyle ðe gehyran me ðingiende to him.

ASM. (2):—480. 143: het se foresæda dema gelædan ðone halgan on heardre racenteage feorre on wrecæ's ferigende on scipe.—xxx. 411: se casere ... het hine ungyrdan and bewæppian and beforan his ansyne ætstandan mid his wife and his cildum swilce ofergægendne his hlaforæs bebod.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (208).

I. Without an Object (205).


NSF. (14):-180. 180: ær se burhwaru ablygæd æðer.


NSN. (15):—78. 469: wunode an mæden maerlice drohtnigende geond feowertig gearc fec fegre gheahalden.—298. 229: þæt oðer folc fleah afþyrht for heora hreamc.—Other examples:—xxvi. 183: astreht; xxv. 567: beþangan; 236. 250: fulfremed; xxvi. 214: gebrocod; xxiii. B. 749: ge-swæden; 32. 134: geþiged; gehæten; 44. 327, 170. 71, 236. 249: gelyfæd; 170. 72, 194. 2; 30. 94: uncwæs; xxiii. B. 285: ymbseald.

NP.M. (37):-180. 167: ac hi . . . ablygæde cyrdon to heora . . . hlaforde.—468. 437: ðæh ðæ ða Iudeiscan ðurh deysol benevecene nellon gelyfæn.—Other examples:—afylledæ: 126. 168, xxviii. 60; afyrhte: 166. 317, xxv. 611, xxvi. 231, xxix. 305; 54. 53: alysde; 116. 25: ægelborne; xxvi. 93: cumene; fornumene: 58. 138 (or pred.), 204. 148, 326. 96; 126. 167: geborene; 342. 73: gebundene; gebylæde: xxv. 488, xxvii. 149; 208. 216: gegeordæ; xxv. 339: gehyrte; 318. 172: gelæofedæ; gelyfædæ: xxiv. 2, xxv. 109, xxviii. 15; 184. 245: gemætyræode; xxv. 558:
getemode; 460. 319: gevtrunemode; gewaempnode: 190. 359, xxv. 333; xxv. 559: geweunode; geworhte: 386. 38, 408. 386; 506. 300: ofdredde; 298. 228: ofhrete; xxv. 497: oflagene; 54. 58: ombryde; xxiii. B. 571: totoirene (but the passage is corrupt).

NPF. (1):—xxv. 813: on ðysre worulde synd ðrea ende-byrdnysses on annysse gesette; ðett synd etc.

DSM. (7):—462. 351: oddæt hi becomon to sumum ænlicum felda fægre geblowen.—xxv. 757: sum leogere... sæde ðæm ealdormenn Apollonius geciged.—140. 368: Nico-stratus... weard... toforan ðæm deman gebroht, fabianus gehaten. So gehaten: 224. 79, 402. 317, xxv. 331, xxvi. 121.

DSF. (11):—xxiii. B. 438; forðon witodlice genoh riht-liche is me swa besmitenre fram ðiur eænan ungewemmednysses beon acsirod.—xxiii. B. 598: Nu ic ðe... andbidde... ðæt ðu for me earmliere forleegen gebidde.—54. 83: gewenden to anre widgyllan byrig, Antiochia geciged. So geciged: 146. 462.—54. 66: ferde to ðære [flowenden] ea iordanis gehaten. So gehaten: 68. 325, 184. 264, 238. 11, xxv. 413, xxix. 4, 146.

DSN. (2):—196. 10: betæhte hi anum fulum wife Afrodosia geciged.—xxxi. 11: Martinus... wæs geboren on ðæm fiestene Sabaria gehaten.

DS. M. or N. (1):—172. 36: He geglaendde me mid orle of golde awefen.

ASM. (20):—44. 350¹: Basilla hæðde enne hæðene wogere, pumpeius geciged, swide weelboren. So geciged: xxix. 213.—312. 68: A... gemam ænne mycelne bollan mid bealuwe afyllde,—xxvii. 11: forlet ða ænne dæl on ðære ycan byrig ðe Crist on ðrowode, swa swa us cyðað gewritu, mid seolfre bewunden.—Other examples:—200. 75: gebigedne (or pred.?); xxiii. B. 661: gefyll-dne; gehaten: 28. 67, 104. 230, 124. 125, 194. 409, 222. 42, 302. 277, 408. 396, xxv. 761, xxvi. 53, xxix. 204, 214; 78. 481¹: toswollen; 78. 482: unafunden.
The appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon. 205


ASN. (2):—92. 26: Da fundon his magas sum æðelboren mæden basilissa gehaten; 132. 258: untobrocen.

APM. (1):—246. 146: wisscrydde.


APN. (1):—24. 225: ealle lichamlicra ðinga hiw heo maeg on hyre sylfre gehiwian, and swa gehiwode on hyre mode gehealden.

II. With an Object (3).

NSN. (1):—288. 71: forðan ðe heo gebedhus is, gode gehalgod.

ASM. (1):—xxiii. B. 676: Eala me ungesællan swa rihtwislicre gesihðe afrendad me.

ASF. (1):—xxiii. B. 442: gefultuma me nu anegre ælces fylstes bedeled (MS. G: bedæled).

Note: Latin Participles occur in 332. 191 (vox clamantis = clypiende stemn), 338. 33 (vir videns deum = ðæt is on Engliscre spripe: se wer ðe god gesihð), xxiii. B. 280 (putans = smeagende), xxiii. B. 287 (reducens = hæbbende).

ÆLFRIC’S DE VETERI ET DE NOVO TESTAMENTO (41).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (15).

I. Without an Object (5).

NSM. (4):—18. 32: be biþende feoll to l. fotum (or pred.?).—20. 24: Bellatores ... ure burga healdas ... feohtende mid wæmmum; libbende (lybbende): 2. 26, 12. 40.

DPM. (1):—5. 34: [mete] him ælce dæg com edniwe of heofenum feowertig wintra fyrst on ðam westene farende. 5
II. With an Object (10).

NSM. (7):—18. 33²: he . . . feoll to i. fotum . . . biddende miltsunge.—Other examples:—16. 32: bodigende (or pred.?); 16. 10: oveđende; 16. 30²: lærende; 20. 10: seegende; wyr-veđende (wirrende) : 15. 23, 16. 30¹.

NPM. (3):—19. 45: ðær ðær hig blissiað andbidiende git ðæs ecan lifes; heriende: 5. 28, 8. 27.

B.—The Preterite Participle (26).

I. Without an Object (26).

NSM. (13):—2. 9, 10: Her is seo halige œrinnis on ðisum œrin mannum . . . se . . . fæder of nanum œðrun gecumen, and se miela wisdom of ðam wisan fæder æfre . . . acenned.—Other examples:—3. 25: advrenced; 13. 40: ahangen; 3. 2: awend; 2. 44: gefiendnod; gehaten: 9. 20, 11. 4; 11. 5: geljfed; 17. 24: grestrangod; 12. 34: geðogen; 18. 33²: oferfelden; 18. 34: ofscenned.

NPM. (3):—20. 20: Laboratores sind yrsljingas and æhte men to ðam anum belschte etc. So: 20. 22.

NPF. (2):—14. 12: ðæt syndon ðreo bee mid lufe ofyllede folce to lare; 11. 21: gehatene.

DSM. (1):—16. 24: binnan anum igoðe feor on wræsísðe, Pathmos gehaten.

ASM. (4):—3. 23: se æcewalde his broðor Abel gehaten unsældigene mannan. So gehaten = acc. sing. masc.: 7. 18, 8. 20, 11. 9.

ASF. (1):—15. 44: he awrat ða boc on his wræsísðe Apocalipsis gehaten.

ASN. (2):—7. 34¹⁺²: He aræde . . . þæt . . . tempel . . . swa fægere getimbrod and swa fæste getrymmed; 7. 35: oferworht.

II. With an Object (0).

No example.
A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (61).

I. Without an Object (25).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (15):

NSM. (9):—Judges 4. 20: gif her ænig man cume acesgende embe me = cum venerit aliiquis interrogans te (or pred.?).—Gen. 19. 14: Æa wæs him geduht, swilce he gamuigende spræce = Et visus est eis quasi ludens loqui.—Other examples:—ingangende = ingrediens: Deut. 28. 61, 191; Num. 22. 34: nitende = nesciens; Gen. 15. 17: smociende = finnans-(or attrib.?) Num. 16. 48: standende = stans; utgangende = egrediens: Deut. 28. 62, 192.

NSN. (2):—Ex. 2. 23: Israela bearn clypode geomriende for ðam weorcum = ingemiscientes filii Israel propter opera vociferati sunt; Job. 1. 19: hreosende = corrocuens.

NPM. (3):—Judges 15. 14: ðunon him togeanes ealle hlydende = Et eam Philisthiim vociferantes occurrissent ei (or pred.?).—Other examples:—Ex. 1. 71: spryttende = germi-

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (5):

NSM. (1):—Gen. 22. 3: Abraham ða aras on ðære ylean nhite and ferde mid twam canum to ðam fyrlenum lande and Isaac samod on assum ridende = Igitur Abraham de nocte consurgens stravit asinum suum, ducens secum duos juvenes et Isaac filium suum abiti in locum.

NPM. (4):—Num. 14. 45: and hig micelum slogon and ehtende adrifon = et percutiens eos atque occidens persecutus est cos.—Other examples:—Num. 20. 30: beweopon geomeri-
ende = flevit (there is an ap. ptc. in the sentence); Josh. 8. 16: hrymdon ridende = vociferantes persecuti sunt eos; Job 2. 12: hrymdon wepende = exclamantes ploraverunt.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):

NSM. (1):—Gen. 24. 63: He eode ut on sæt land séncende = Et egressus fuerat ad meditandum in agro.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no exact Latin correspondence (4):


NPM. (2):—Job 2. 12: cumende; Josh. 7. 6: liegende.

II. With an Object (36).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (25):

NSM. (12):—Gen. 1. 22: And bletsode hig, þus cweðende = Benedixitque eis dicens. So cweðende = dicens: Gen. 2. 16, 8. 15, 17. 17; Ex. 3. 16, 5. 6; Deut. 32. 48, 34. 4.—Other examples:—Job 1. 8: yfel forbugende = recedens a malo; Job 1. 8: ondraedende = timens; Job (Exposition), p. 266, 1. 20: secende = quercens (for Latin cf. I. Peter 5. 8); Gen. 2. 6: wætrende = irrigans.

NSF. (5):—Gen. 18. 12: (Sarra) hloh digellice, þus cweðende = Quæ risit occulte, dicens. So cweðende = dicens: Gen. 15. 4; Num. 16. 41.—Other examples:—Num. 10. 33: sceawende = providens; seegende = dicens: Gen. 15. 1.

NSN. (1):—Judges 6. 7: Swa Israela folc ða earmlice elipode to ðam . . . gode, his helps biddende = Et clamavit Israel ad dominum, postulans auxilium.

NPM. (1):—Gen. 3. 5: ge beoð donne englum gelice witende ægðer ge god ge yfel = et eritis sicut dii, scientes bonum et malum.
The Appositive Participle in Anglo-Saxon. 209

ASF. (1):—Gen. 1. 12: se oorðe forð ateah growende wirte and sæd berende be hire cinne = protulit terra herbam virentem et facientem semen juxta genus suum.

ASN. (4):—Gen. 1. 11: Spritte se oorðe growende gers and sæd wircende and æppebære treow væstm wircende æfter his cinne = Germinet terra herbam virentem et facientem semen et lignum pomiferum faciens fructum juxta genus suum; ib. Gen. 1. 122: habbende = habens.

APF. (1):—Gen. 1. 29: ic forgeaf cow eall gers and wyrtæ sæd berende ofer eorðan = dedi vobis omnem herbam afferentem semen super terram.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually either subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (3):—

NSM. (1):—Deut. 4. 45: . . æ, squeeze Moises foresette and laga and domas, ðus ecwædende = . . lex, quam proposuit M., et . . judicia quæ locutus est.

NSF. (1):—Josh. 10. 6: ða sende se o burhwaru . . to Iosue bidiende ðæt etc. = miserunt ad Iosue et dixerunt ei.

ASN. (1):—Deut. 11. 25: Ge . . gehirdon his word, ðus ecwædende = . . et locutus est vobis.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no exact Latin correspondence (8):—


B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (38).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (38).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (11):—
NPM. (3):—Num. 15. 44: Hig swa Æah ablende beotlice astigon = At illi contenebrati ascenderunt.—Other examples:—Ex. 1. 7: gestrangode = roborati; Num. 16. 33: ofhorene = operti.
ASM. (3):—Gen. 22. 13: geseha Æer anne ramm betwux Æam bremelum be Æam hornum gehœft = viditque . . . arietem inter vepres haerentem cornibus (or pred.?).—Other examples:—Ex. 9. 24: hagol wið fyrgemenged = mista; Ex. 29. 23: gesprengedne = conspersae.
ASN. (2):—Ex. 12. 8: And eton ealle Æet flæsc on fyre gebræold = Et edent carnes nocte illa assas igni:—Ex. 12. 9: gesoden = coctum aqua.
APM. (1):—Levit. 2. 4: Bring clene ofenbacene hlafas mid ele geasmirede = panes conspersos oleo.
APN. (2):—Ex. 31. 18: He sealde Moïse twa stenene wexbreda mid godes banda agrafene = duas tabulas lapideas scriptas digito dei; Gen. 41. 6: forscruncene = percussae.
2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (1):—
NSN. (1):—Judges 16. 4: Hine beswac swa Æah siëðan an wif, Dalila gehaten = Post hæc amavit mulierem, quæ vocabatur Dalila.
3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (2):—
NPM. (2):—Ex. 12. 19¹²: ne ete ge nan Æing onhafenes, ne utan cymene ne innan lande geborene = tam de advenis quam de indigenis terrae.
4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative (1):—
NSM. (1):—Judges 13. 2: An man wes eardigende on Israhela Æode, Manne gehaten = Erat autem quidam vir nomine Manue.
5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):—
NPM. (1):—Ex. 4. 31: and hig gebædon hig to gode nywel astrehte on eorðan = et pruni adoraverunt.
6. An A.-S. appositive participle has no exact Latin correspondence (22):—


NSF. (1):—Gen. 21. 6: ofewundrod.

NSN. (1):—Num. 16. 34: afirht.


DSF. (1):—Judges 16. 1: to anre birig, Gaza gehaten.

DPM. (1):—Judges 16. 7: mid seofon rapum of sinum geworhte.


II. With an Object (0).

No example.

ANGLO-SAXON HOMILIES AND LIVES
OF SAINTS, I. (89).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (49).

I. Without an Object (25).

NSF. (2):—1. 24: Deos is seo halige ðrynns, ðe ealle ðing gesceop, on anre godcundynsse æfre wunigende.—So: 3. 130. 

NSN. (2):—3. 437: Sum ... wif ... his fet aðwoh and gelome hi cyste, liegende æt his fotum; 9. 80: wunigende.

NPM. (11):—6. 113: ... gif we her nu swincað, feothende mid geleafan wið leathras.—Other examples:—9. 357: hlydende; liebende: 7. 6, 9. 60; 9. 61: swyltende; truwigende: 9. 88, 9. 350²; wunigende: 3. 132, 3. 527, 6. 66, 9. 133.

NPN. (1):—3. 324: ðeah ðe hi [= mælenu] clene beon on mægðade lybbende.

NP. M. or F. (1):—3. 12: lybbende.

DPM. (1):—7. 151: [mete] heom ælce dæge com edniwe of heofenum xl wintra fyrst on ðam wæstene farende.

ASM. (1):—9. 330: ae ... he asende me ongean on his sige blissigende and on eowre alysednysse.

APM. (1):—9. 103: god hi ða geleædde ... calle ofer ða ... æ, siðigende be ðam grunde.

II. With an Object (24).

NSM. (4):—1. 304: se ... lareow lærde us ðus cweðende.—Other examples:—4. 55: seconde; seegende: 3. 181, 3. 531.

NSF. (3):—8. 176: heo ... fieste, biddende æt gode, ðæt etc.—Other examples:—9. 318: cweðende; 9. 417: ðæowigende (w. dat.).

NSN. (2):—9. 111: ðæt godes folc ða code upp be ðam grunde, herigende heora drihten; 3. 479: singende.


APM. (1):—2. 117: Johannes ... geseyth Crist standan and ðone clænan flocc mid him, hundteontig ðusenda and
feower and feowertig ðusenda, swiðe hlude *singende* ðone heofonlican sang.

**B.—The Preterite Participle (40).**

**I. Without an Object (40).**

NSM. (13):—1. 67: he us alysde ... mid his agenum deaðe, on rode *ahangen*.—Other examples:—7. 28: *awend*; *gehaten*: 5. 9; 8. 2, 78, 127; 9. 193; 8. 268: *gehathyrt*; 9. 194: *gelyfed*; 7. 23: *ihestnod*; *ihaten*: 7. 214, 287; 7. 288: *ilyfed*.

NSF. (3):—9. 207: heo fieste symle buton on freolsdagum, mid hærán *gescryd* to hire lice æfre.—Other examples:—7. 61: *awogen*; 3. 27: *geseacen*.

NSN. (4):—3. 349: Iacobes wif, Rachel *geciged*, twentig wintra wunode etc.—Other examples:—3. 334: *gehaten*; 8. 149: *tostenced*; 3. 95: *ungewemmed*.


NPF. (1):—7. 302: Twa bec beoð isette ... machabeorum *ihatene*.

DSM. (1):—3. 25: And eac his godecundnyss wæs on ðære menniscynsse to anum soðan Criste of hyre acenned, æfre *unbegunnen* on ðære godecundynsse.

DSF. (1):—2. 114: on his gastlican gesiðæ, *Apocalipsis gehaten*.

DSN. (1):—3. 362: mid his wife, Elisabeth *genamod*.


ASF. (1):—9. 9: towænde se cyning heora ... burh, Hierusalem *gehaten*. 

---

*Note:* The text includes examples from various Anglo-Saxon texts, illustrating the use of the appositive participle and the preterite participle in English. The text is a detailed analysis of these linguistic features, with references to specific passages from different manuscripts and historical periods.
II. With an Object (0).

No example.

ANGLO-SAXON HOMILIES AND LIVES OF SAINTS, II. (22).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (16).

I. Without an Object (11).

NSM. (2):—15. 353: ic hit unwillende do; 10. 90: sçamiente.


NPF. (1):—15. 51: hire fostermoder hi het gan mid oðrum fænnun on feld, sceap to hawienne, and hi swa dydo[n] spinnende.

APM. (2):—15. 242⁴⁴: Sume ic slepende beswæc and sume eac vacigende = 19. 265: Et cum dormiunt, venio super eos et excito illos a somno.

II. With an Object (5).

NSM. (4):—15. 52: Ða ferde Olibrius to Anthiochiam, axiende etc.; acxædende: 18. 57, 80, 109.

DSM. (1):—11. 16: Audiens ex ore meo sermonem meum, adnuntiabis eis ex me, non ex te. Ðet is on urum geæode: Of minum muðe gehystendum [for gehystende by attraction to muðe?] ðu bodast hym mine spreæe of me, næs of ðe.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (6).

I. Without an Object (5).

NSM. (1):—15. 12: væs sum hæðen cyninge, Theodosius gehaten.
NSF. (1):—15. 44: heo cwað; ic com ðin ðeowa [sic!] eðena and ungewæmmæd.

NSN. (1):—16. 55: hig hym dryncean scaldon, ðæt wæs wyn and eced gemenged togeadere.

NPM. (1):—12. 45: hwilum willes, hwilum geneadode gewuniað of to drincanne.

ASF. (1):—15. 45: De ic me betæce ungewæmmode.

II. With an Object (1).

NSM. (1):—17. 23: ic eam of Grecane rice and ic of Iudean wæs, ðan Pontisseenc Pilate under-ðeodd.

Note: Latin Participles.—Latin participles occur in 11. 16 (quoted under dative above), in 13. 13 (sciens = ða wiste se heelend), in 13. 59 (sciens = He wiste), and in 18. 68 (et videns filium etc. = no A.-S. equivalent). Again in no. 19, which is entirely in Latin and which is the basis, though not the literal equivalent, of no. 15 (Anglo-Saxon), about 55 appositive participles occur; but, as no one of these is translated by an appositive participle in Old English, it seems unnecessary to cite them.

GOSPELS1 (280).

A.—The Present Participle (237).

I. Without an Object (115).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (107):—

5, 15. 29, 17. 17; Mk. 1. 35: arisende = surgens; L. 5. 3⁴: astigende = adscendens; Mk. 7. 34: behealdende = suspiciens; L. 3. 18: bodigende = exhortans; Mk. 1. 7: bugende = procumbens; clypiende = clamans: Mk. 15. 39, L. 23. 46⁵; ib. = exclamans: Mk. 1. 26⁶; Mat. 12. 44: cumende = veniens; Mk. 9. 20: femende = spumans; Mat. 4. 9: feallende = cadens; gangende = ambulans: Mat. 14. 25 (or pred.?), Mk. 6. 48 (or pred.?): ib. = transiens, L. 12. 37; L. 15. 5: geblissiende = gaudens; Mk. 1. 31: geneuclecendec = accedens; hrymende = clamans: Mk. 5. 5 (or pred.?), 5. 7; ib. = exclamans: Mk. 9. 26⁵; L. 8. 28; ingau(e)cende = ingressus: Mk. 1. 21, L. 1. 28; leverende = docens: Mat. 4. 23, 9. 35⁵; Mk. 12. 35; L. 17. 24: lyhtende = coruscans; L. 5. 3⁶: sittende = sedens; Mk. 7. 33: spatende = expuens; L. 4. 39: standende = stans; Mk. 15. 30: stigende = descendens; L. 1. 78: upspringende = oriens; utgangende = egressus: Mk. 1. 45, L. 4. 42.


NSN. (4): —Mk. 5. 33⁵⁶: Þæt wif ða ondraedende & forhtigende com & astrehte hi = Mulier vero timens et tremens . . . venit et procidit; gangende = introiens: Mk. 7. 15, 7. 18.

NPM. (30): —Mk. 15. 31: heahsacerdas bysmriende betwux ðam bocerum cwædon = sacerdotes illudentes . . . dicebant.—Other examples: —Mk. 7. 1: cumende = venientes; L. 22. 65: dysigende = blasphemantes; L. 2. 16: efstende = festinantes; Mk. 16. 20: firende = profecti; gangende = intrantes, Mat. 2. 11; ib. = incendentes, L. 1. 6; gehyrende = audientes: Mat. 13. 13⁶, Mk. 4. 12⁶, L. 8. 10⁶; gesonde = videntes: Mk. 4. 12⁶, L. 8. 10⁶; Mk. 11. 24: gynrende = orantes; Mat. 9. 27: hrymynde = clamantes; Mat. 12. 45: ingangende = intrantes; Mat. 5. 11: leogende = mentientes; lociende = videntes: Mat. 13. 13⁴, 13. 14; L. 2. 48: sari-gende = dolentes; Mat. 27. 36: sittende = sedentes; Mat. 17.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 217

3: sprecende = loquentes; Mat. 6. 5: standende = stantes; Mk. 6. 32: stigende = adscendentes; L. 5. 5: swincende = laborantes; utgangende (utgangynde) = exeunte: Mat. 8. 28, 9. 31, Mk. 3. 6, 6. 12; L. 20. 26: wundrigende = mirati; L. 22. 44: yrnende = decurrentis.

NPN. (1):—Mat. 8. 32: big[= deofla] utgangende ferdon on ða swin = At illi exeuntes abierunt in porcos.

NDM. (1):—L. 24. 17: hwæt synt ða spæca ðe gyt recceæ in ðe betwyman gaðende? = Qui sunt hi sermones quos confertis ad invicem ambulantes?

GPM. (1):—L. 18. 7: Sōðlice ne deð God his geecorenra wrace eþfyendra to him dæges & nihtes = Deus antem non faciet vindictam electorum suorum elamantium ad se die ac nocte.

GPN. (1):—L. 8. 32: And ðar wæs micel heord swyna on ðam muntre læsiendra = Erat . . . grex porcorum . . . pascentium in monte.

DSN. (1):—Mat. 13. 47b: Eft is heofena rice gelic aсидum nette on ða sæ & of ælcum fisc-cynne gadrigendum = Iterum simile est regnum caelestium sagnæ misæ in mare, et ex omni generi piscium congreganti.

DPM. (5):—L. 6. 17: And mid him farendum he stod on feldlice stowe = Et descendens cum illis stetit in loco campestri. [Or shall we emend farendum to farende in accordance with the Latin?]—Other examples:—Mk. 9. 42: gevysendum = credentibus; Mk. 16. 10a: heofendum = lugentibus; Mat. 11. 16: sittendum = sedentibus; Mk. 16. 10b: wependum = flentibus.

DPM. (2):—L. 7. 32a & b: Hi sint gelice cildum on stræte sittendum & specendum betwux him = Similes sunt pueris sedentibus in foro, et loquentibus ad invicem.

ASM. (4):—Mk. 15. 21: & genyddon sumne wegferendne simonem cireneum cumende of ðam tune . . . Sæt he etc. = Et angariaverunt praetereunt quempiam, Simonem Cyreneum veniendum de villa etc.—Other examples:—J. 1. 9:
cumendne = venientem; L. 17. 7*: eregendne = arantem; Mat. 9. 2: liegendne = jacentem.

ASN. (1):—L. 6. 38*: god gemet & full geheaped and oferflowende big syllae = mensuram, bonam . . . et superef-fluentem dabunt.

APM. (1):—Mat. 4. 24: yfelhebbende = male habentes.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (2):

NSM. (2):—Mk. 11. 17: & he ða lærende ðus cwæð = Et docebat, dicens eis.—Mat. 26. 27*: And he genam ðone calic ðænce unde & sealde hym ðus cwæðende = Et accipiens calicem, gratias egit, et dedit illis, dicens.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (2):

NSM. (2):—L. 15. 13: & forspilde ðær his æhta, lybbende on his gelsan = et ibi dissipavit substantiam suam vivendo luxuriose;—L. 12. 25: ðænce unde = cogitando.


NSM. (1):—Mk. 9. 24: wepende cwæð = cum lacrymis aiebat.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin ablative absolute clause (1):

NSM. (1):—L. 6. 20: ðæ cwæð se hælend besonde to his learning-enuhtum = Et ipse elevatis oculis in discipulos suos, diecebat.

6. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):

NSM. (1):—Mk. 5. 40: He . . . ineode swigande (Hat. MS.) ðær ðæt næden wæs = Ipse . . . ingreditur ubi etc.

NSF. (1):—L. 2. 51: And his modor gehelod calle ðas word on hyre heortan smeagende = Et mater ejus conservabat omnia verba in corde suo. [Cf. L. 2. 19, where smeagende = conferens.]
II. With an Object (122).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (117):
   
   NSM. (57):—Mk. 1. 41: & his hand aðenode & hine æþrinende [Hat. MS. æþrinede] & ðæs cwæð = extendit manum suam, et tangens eum, ait illi.—Mat. 10. 5: & hað twelf se h. sende, him bebeodende = Hos duodecim misit J., præcipients eis.—L. 3. 3: he com into eall iordanes rice bodiende deæbote fulluht & syna forgynesse = venit in omnem regionem Iordanis, prædicans baptismum penitentiae in remissionem peccatorum (or pred.?). So sobodi(y)ende = prædicans in: Mat. 9. 35b, Mk. 1. 14 (or pred.?); = evangelizans in L. 8. 1b (or pred.?).—Mat. 9. 18: & ge-eaðmedde hyne to him, ðæs cwæðende = et adorabat eum, dicens. So cwæðende (cwæðynede) = dice in: Mat. 8. 6, 9. 29, 9. 30, 10. 5b, 13. 3, 13. 31, 26. 27b, 26. 44, 27. 11; Mk. 1. 15 (or pred.?), 9. 25; L. 23. 46; J. 1. 15, 1. 32.—Other examples:—L. 5. 13 (MS. A): aðenige = extendens; behealdende = circumspiciens, Mk. 3. 34; ib. = intuitus, Mk. 10. 21; Mk. 14. 13: berende = bajulans; Mk. 3. 5b: besceawiende = circumspiciens; Mk. 10. 23: besconde hine = circumspiciens (without object);—biddende = rogans, Mat. 8. 5; ib. = deprecans, Mk. 1. 40; bletsiende = benedicens, Mk. 14. 22, L. 1. 64; Mk. 5. 5: ceorfende = coincidens (or pred.?); J. 6. 6: fældyende his = tentans eum; Mk. 8. 13: forlætende = dimittens; Mat. 9. 12: gehýrende = audiens; gescende = videns, Mk. 9. 15b, L. 1. 12 (no obj. in Latin); L. 14. 7: gymanende = intendens; hæbbe = habens: Mk. 3. 1, 9. 47, L. 4. 33, 7. 8b; Mat. 9. 35b: hælende = curans; L. 17. 15: mærscende = magnificans; L. 4. 40: onsettende = imponus; L. 8. 1b: prediciende = prædicans (or pred.?); secende = quercens: Mat. 12. 43, L. 11. 24, 13. 7 (or pred.?);—L. 3. 16: seegende = dicens; Mk. 10. 16: settede = imponus; slitende = discerpens, Mk. 1. 26b, 9. 26b; ib. = scindens, Mk. 14. 63; L. 10. 39: upbesconde hine = suscipients (no object); L. 18. 43: wuldrigende
= magnificans; L. 24. 12b: wundrigende ßæs = mirans quod (or pred.?).

NSF. (4):—Mat. 20. 20a b: Dæ com to him zebedois bearua modor mid hyre bearum hig ge-eahnedende & sum ßinge fram him biddende = Tune accessit . . . mater, adorans et petens aliquid ab eo.—Other examples:—J. 11. 28: evedênde = dicens; Mk. 3. 8: gehyrende = audientes.

NSN. (3):—L. 2. 23: ßæt selc wæpned geeyn-lim ontynende byß drihtne halig genemned = Quia omne masculinum adaperiens vulvam, sanctum Domino vocabitur.—Other examples:—Mk. 7. 19: clevsîgender = purgans; L. 7. 29a: gehyrende = audients.

NPM. (36):—Mk. 1. 5: & wærâ . . . gefullode . . ., hyra sunna andetende (MS. A.) = et baptizabantur . . ., con-fîntentes peccata sua.—Other examples:—Mk. 6. 55: befarende = perforundes; Mk. 2. 3: berende = ferentes (or pred.?); L. 24. 53b: bletsîgender = benedicentes (or pred.?); Mat. 19. 3: costhinîgender hine = tentantes eum;—evedênde = dicentes in: Mat. 6. 31, 8. 25, 9. 27, 10. 7, 10. 12, 12. 10, 12. 38, 27. 23, 27. 29, Mk. 3. 11, J. 11. 31;—demênde = judicantes: Mat. 19. 28, L. 22. 30 (or both pred.?); fandî(g)ende his = tentantes eum: Mk. 10. 2, J. 8. 6; L. 24. 52: gebiddende = orantes (no obj. in Latin); L. 6. 35: geheîtende = sperantes; gehyrende = audientes: L. 4. 28, 8. 15; L. 20. 11: gewæcende = afficientes; Mk. 7. 3: healdende = tenentes; herîcende (her-gende) = laudantes: L. 2. 20b (or pred.?), 24. 53a (or pred.?)

L. 20. 47: hîcîgende = simulantes; secîcende = querentes: Mat. 12. 16, 12. 47, L. 11. 54; ib. = requirentes: L. 2. 45; Mk. 7. 13: toslîcende = resciîcîntes; L. 23. 10: wregende = accusantes (or pred.?); L. 2. 20a: wuldriende = glorîcîntes (or pred.)?

NPF. (3):—Mat. 9. 33: ßa menigeo wundredon evedênde = mirate sunt turbe, dicentes.—Other examples:—Mat. 15. 31a: gescîcende = videntes; Mat. 15. 30: hæbbênde = habentes.

NPN. (4):—Mat. 8. 31: ßa deoîla soðîlice hyne ßædôn, ßes evedênde = Diemones autem rogabant eum, dicentes. So evedênde = dicentia in L. 4. 41b.—Other examples: L. 4.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 221

41a: hrymende = clamantia; Mat. 27. 55: ūnigende him = ministrantes ei.

NP. M. or N. (1);—L. 23. 49: cœðan & wif gesonde = videntes.

NDM. (1):—Mk. 11. 5: Hwæt do gyt ðone folan uñti-
gende? = Quid facitis solventes pullum?

DSM. (2);—L. 6. 48: He ys gelic timbriendum men his his
hus = Similis est homini edificanti domum. Cf. L. 6. 49:
He ðis gelic ðam timbriendan men his ðosfer ða eorðan =
similis est homini edificari domum etc.

DPN. (1);—L. 7. 32e; Hi synt gelice cildum . . . eveden-
dum = Similes sunt pueris . . . dicentibus.

ASM. (5);—Mat. 8. 17: ðæt ware gefyllde ðæt gegewede
is ðurh eœiam ūone witegan, ðus evedende = Ut adimplere-
tur quod dictum est per õœiam prophetam, dicentem. So
evedende = dicentem in Mat. 12. 17, 27. 9.—Other examples:
—Mk. 9. 17: heabbende = habentem; L. 17. 7b: læsgendi =
pascentem.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
finite verb, which finite verb is generally either subordinate
or in immediate connection with an appositive participle
(3):

NSM. (1);—Mat. 14. 19: besæah on ðone heofon & bletsi-
gende bræc ða hlafas = adspiciens in cœlum benedixit et
fregit . . . panes.

NSF. (1);—L. 18. 5: ðe-læs heo æt neahstan cuime me
behopende = ne in novissimo veniens sugillet me (or pred.?).

NPM. (1);—Mk. 9. 15b: & hine gretende him to urnon =
et accurrentes salutabant eum.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin corre-
spondence (2):

NSM. (1);—Mat. 22. 35: axode hyne & fandode hys ðus
evedende = Et interrogavit eum unus ex eis legis doctor,
tentans eum.

NSF. (1);—J. 12. 28: ða com stefn of heofone ðus
evedende = Venit ergo vox de cœlo.

6
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (43).

I. Without an Object (36).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (34):

NSM. (14):—Mk. 14. 51: Sum iungling him fyligde mid anre seytan bewend to ðære menigu = Adolescens autem quidam sequebatur cum amictus sindone super nudo.—Mk. 5. 30: he cwes bewend to ðære menigu = conversus ad turbam aiebat. So bewend = conversus: L. 7. 9, 10. 23, 14. 25, 23. 28.—Other examples:—Mk. 9. 20: forgnyden = elisus; Mk. 5. 4: gebunden = vinetus; Mat. 2. 22: gemynegod = admonitus; gesett = constitutus: Mat. 8. 9, L. 7. 8*: Mk. 3. 5*: gewrel = contristatus; L. 22. 32: gewend = conversus; Mat. 25. 25: ofdred = timens (or pred.?).

NSF. (1):—Mat. 14. 8: ða cwes heo fram hyre meder = Adolescens autem quidam sequebatur cum amictus sindone super nudo.—Mk. 14. 8: Da cwes heo fram hyre meder gemyngod = At illa præmonita a matre sua ... inquit.

NSN. (2):—L. 11. 17: Æle rice on hyt sylf todceled byð toworpen = Omne regnum in se ipsum divisum desolabitur.—L. 10. 15: upahafen = exaltata.

NPM. (5):—L. 1. 74: ðæt we butan ege of ure seunda handa alysedâ him þeowian = Ut sine timore, de manu ... liberati, serviamus illi.—Other examples:—gefullode (gefullode) = baptizati, L. 7. 29*, 7. 30; L. 9. 31: gesewene = visi; Mat. 7. 6: gewende = conversi.

NPN. (1):—Mat. 26. 47: ða com iudas ... & micel folc mid hym mid swurdum & sahllum asende fram ... ealdrum = eceo Judas ... venit, et cum eo turba multa cum gladiis et fustibus, missi a principibus etc.

DSN. (1):—Mat. 13. 47*: Eft is heofena rice gelic asendum nette on ða sæ = Iterum simile est regnum caelorum sagenæ missæ in mare.

ASM. (7):—Mk. 16. 6: ge secæ ðæne nazarensican hælend ahangenne = Jesum queritis Nazarenum, crucifixum.—Other examples:—Mat. 27. 37: averittenne = scriptam; Mk.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 223

15. 17: awundenne = plectentes; Mk. 15. 15: beswungenne = cæsum; L. 23. 16: gebetne = emendatum; Mat. 27. 16: gehaftne = vinctum; L. 7. 25: geserydne = indutum.

ASF. (1):—L. 22. 12: he eow betæcð myecl yealle gehedcefle = ipse ostendet vobis cœnaculum magnum strutum.

ASN. (2):—L. 6. 38: god gemet & full geheapod... hig syllær = mensuram bonam, et confortam et coagitatam... dabunt; Mat. 27. 34: gemenged = midtum.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or in immediate connection with an appositive participle (1):—

ASM. (1):—L. 20. 15: hig hine of ðam wingearde awurpon ofslægene = ejectum illum extra vineam occiderunt.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):—

NSF. (1):—L. 1. 28: hal wes ðu mid gyfe gesylled = Ave, gratia plena (or subst.?).

II. WITH AN OBJECT (7).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (7):—

NSM. (1):—Mk. 9. 31: & ofslægen ðam ðriddan dæge he arist = et occisus tertia die resurget.

DSF. (1):—L. 1. 27: was asend gabriel... to bewed-dudre ðæmnan anum were ðæs nama ðæs ıosep =... ad virginem desponsatam viro cui nomen erat J.

ASM. (3):—Mat. 11. 8: oððe hwi eode ge ut geseon mann hnesecum gyrlum geserydne? = Sed quid existis videre? hominem mollibus vestitum? So geserydne = indutum: L. 23. 11; Mk. 16. 5: ofserworhne = co-opertum.

ASN. (1):—Mat. 11. 7: Hwi eode ge ut on weséñ geseon winde awegyd hreod? = Quid existis in desertum videre? arundinem vento agitata?

APM. (1):—Mat. 4. 24: hi brohton him ealle yfel-hæbbende, missenlicum adlum & on tintegrum gegrípene =
obtulerunt ei omnes male habentes, variis languoribus et tormentis comprehensos.

Note: Examples of Participles hitherto cited as Appositive.

A. Erdmann (p. 26) considers bebeodende appositive in Matthew 11. 1 (hyt væx geworden ọa se hælynd ọys ge-endude hyg twelf learning-enditude bebeodende he for ọsanun = factum est, quam consummasset Jesus præcipiens duodecim discipulis suis, transit inde), and that ọys is the object of bebeodende; while Mätzner (III., p. 70) and March (§ 458) seem to hold that the participle here is used substantivally and is the object of ge-endude. To me, however, neither of these views seems tenable; I take ọys to be the object of bebeodende and the participle to be used predicatively after the intransitive verb of ending, as is common in Greek (cf. Goodwin, Gr. Grammar, § 1578) and as occurs in the Greek of this verse.

Again, Erdmann (p. 28) holds that gangende is appositive in Luke 9. 34 (hi ondredon him gangende on sæt genip = temuerunt, intrantibus illis in nubem); but, as I have since tried to show (Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 13), the participle is more probably a crude absolute dative.

According to Erdmann (p. 28) ahsiende is possibly appositive in Mark 9. 32 (hi adredon hine ahsiende = timebant interrogare eum), while Mätzner (III., p. 70) and March (§ 458) appear to look upon ahsiende as the substantival object of adredon. For several reasons, however, I believe that ahsiende is to be emended to ahsienne, which latter is the infinitive object of adredon. (1) We know that this confusion of infinitive and participial forms occurs in the Gospels (cf. above Mk. 1. 5, where I give MS. A.’s andetende instead of the Corpus anddetenne). (2) We find the verb ondredan governing an inflected infinitive as direct object (cf. Mat. 1. 20, 2. 22, both cited by Erdmann). (3) ahsienne would correspond better with the infinitive of the Latin (and Greek) than would ahsiende.
In Luke 9. 55, Professor Bright, following MSS. B. and C., reads: *hine bewend, he hig ßreade (= conversus increpavit illos)*, in which case *bewend* would be appositive. But, as we have no other instance in the Gospels of the past participle (*bewend*) governing an accusative, it seems better to read, with the remaining MSS., *bewende (bewente).* The Lindisfarne and Rushworth Glosses likewise have a finite verb here. For the other occurrences of *bewend* in the Gospels, see NSM. under B, i., 1 above.

**WULFSTAN (28).**

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (9).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (3).

NSM. (1):—244. 7*: ßæt is fæder and sunu and halig gast and is an sóð god rixigende and gemende ealra his gesceasta a butan ende.

NPM. (1):—295. 14: hi seolon fleonde on gefeohte beon ofslagene.

NPN. (1):—236. 26: and ßa deoflu wendon sceamigende aweg.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (6).

NSM. (5):—199. 15: be ßam awrat Iohannes . . . ßus eweßende. *Ib.* 201. 8, 246. 11, both immediately before a Latin quotation. [Only one other example of *eweßende* occurs in Wulfstan (see 105. 30 under NPM.). Wulfstan translates *dicens (diceantes)* twice by a co-ordinated finite verb (60. 14, 87. 15) and once by a subordinated finite verb (87. 18), while twice he leaves it untranslated (31. 32, 77. 3).]—244. 7b: ßæt is fæder and sunu and halig gast and is an sóð

*The past participle must however certainly be allowed to govern the accusative. I should still regard *hine bewend* as a servile translation of *conversus*, and the readings of Corp. and A. as representing steps in revision.—J. W. B.*
god rixigende and *gemende* ealra his gesceaftra a butan ende.—
278. 9: and on *ðam* cahteðan deve manna gehwylc ham
ferde mid fulre blisse gode ælmihtigum *sænejende* ðære
mærðe (or predicative?).

NPM. (1):—105. 30: we hine æume ofer ealle ðing
lufjað and wurðjað mid gewissum geleafan *eweðende* etc.

B.—*The Preterite Participle* (19).

I. **Without an Object** (15).

NSM. (2):—25. 19: se *ðe* ðæne bryne ðurhfeorð unbesenecgeð (or pred.?); 26. 7: *gemenecgeð* (or pred.?).

NPM. (7):—133. 5a & b: and ge tofisede swide æfhræte oft
litel werod earhlice forbugað = 131. 23: et animam uestræm
*tabescentem* faciam, et persequuntur uos inimici uestri, et
fugietis nullo persequente.—137. 18: and we beoð him
ðonne færinga beforan brohte æghwanon eumene to his
ansyne.—Other examples:—*gehadode* (*gehadede*): 160. 1, 181.
29, 272. 21, 292. 30.

ASF. (5):—263. 4, 5, 6a & b: ³yeah ³ðæ mihtegestan and
³ðæ ricestan hatan him reste gewyrcean of marmanstane and mid
goldfretwum and mid gineynnum eal astwæned and mid seol-
frænum ruwum and godwebbe eall oferwigen and mid deor-
wyrdum wyrtgemengnessum eal gestreded and mid goldleafum
gestreved ymbutan; 163. 6: gewylede.

AP. M. or F. (1):—46. 7: wa cew, he cwæð, ³ðæ lægað
togedere hamas and ælta on uiriht *begytene* on æghwilef
healfæ.

II. **With an Object** (4).

NSM. (1):—48. 3: and forðæm he sceal drefan dimne and
deopæ hellewites grund, helps *bedeled*.

NPM. (3):—256. 12a, b, c: ac gewitað fram me, wuldre
*bedeled*, freondum *afyrede*, freondum betehte in ðam hatan
wylyne hellefyres.
Note: Latin Participles in Wulfstan.—Thirty-four Latin participles occur in Wulfstan. Of these, twelve are untranslated (adorantes, 175. 14; audientes (twice), 42. 29, 47. 12; dicens (twice), 31. 32, 77. 3; egressus, 87. 10; elevatus, 31. 19; placentem, 31. 28; reatus, 63. 12; respondens, 87. 12; scribentes, 43. 9; sumentes, 30. 12); twelve are translated by a subordinated finite verb (accedens, 29. 11; agnosceps, 29. 15; audienst, 190. 11; dicens, 87. 18; fallens, 50. 19; habentes, 43. 15b; ponentes (twice), 42. 25, 26; scienst, 248. 9; sperantes (twice), 43. 15, 48. 6; tabescentes, 131. 30); and nine are translated by a co-ordinated finite verb (dans, 29. 21; dicens (twice), 60. 14, 87. 15; faciens, 248. 10; respondens (respondentes) (thrice), 62. 3, 67. 23, 87. 16; reverentes (twice), 44. 5, 49. 17).

BENET¹ (142).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (103).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (40).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (35): —

NSM. (12):—95. 10: niwan ciumende (text: cumenne) sænig to gecyrynedesse ne si him edelc forgifen infsereld = Noviter veniens quis ad conversionem non ei facilis tribuatnr ingressus. So ciumende = veniens: 80. 6, 95. 13.—Other examples:—4. 8: forseonde = responsus; 36. 2b: gangende = ambulans; 116. 15: gebetende = satisfaciens; 114. 14: getrunwige = confidens; 69. 5: ingangende = ingrediens; 68. 1: lufiannde = diligens; 36. 2a: sittende = sedens; 36. 2c: standende = stans; 57. 3b: surhuenigende = persistens.

NSF. (1):—2. 11: utan gehyran . . . eliptende hwæt us myngie stefn = audiamus . . . clamans quid nos ammoneat vox.

NSN. (1):—9. 16: sæt forme mynstermannæ sæt is mynsterlic campiende under regule oððe abbude = Primum
coenobitarum hoc est monasteriale militans sub regula vel abbate.

NPM. (13):—55. 7: arisende soâlice to godes weorce . . .
gemedlice tihtan oâše laran = Surgentes vero ad opus dei
invicem se moderate cohortent. So arisende (arisende) =
surgentes: 55. 4, 81. 16.—Other examples:—24. 12:
droh(ti)gende = degentes; 106. 11: forahroâdigende = pre-
venientes; 24. 11b: gangende = ambulantes; gecyrrende =
revertentes: 92. 14, 93. 2; 24. 10: libbende = viventes; 6.
12: Surhweonigende = perseverantes; utgangende = eceuntes:
75. 5b, 81. 12, 93. 1.

NP. M. or F. (1):—45. 7: gebyriende = pertinentes.

Note.—utgangendum (in 66. 15: 8a utgangendum = egre-
dientes) is either absolute or substantive; in the latter case
read 8a utgangendan.

GSM. (1):—25. 10: se âše heortan his besceawaâceoriendes
= qui cor ejus respicit murmurantis.

GPM. (2):—69. 1: meosan etenda gebroârum (read ge-
broâra) rœeline wana beon na seell = Mensis fratrum edentum
lectio desesse non debet; 78. 12: utgangendre = eceuntium.

DSM. (1):—13. 9: ûet ahwenne him na seege synchengum
= nequando illi dicit deus pecciânti.

DPM. (1):—118. 10: us asolcenum ã yfel lybbendum ã
gimeleasum scame gescyndnysse = nobis autem . . . male
viventibus . . . rubor confusionis est.

APM. (2):—21. 7: geâohtas 8a yfelan heortan his to
becmenede (text becmenene) sona to christe aslidan = Cogita-
tiones malas cordi suo advenientes mox ad christum allidere.
So eumende = advenientes: 33. 5.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
adjective (2):—

NSM. (1):—61. 6: hordere si gecoren of geggedeurunge wis
. . . na upahafen [blank] drefende = Cellarins . . . eligatur
de congregatione sapiens . . . non elatus non turbulentus.

NPM. (1):—11. 2: 8a . . . cumliðiaâ æfre worigende ã
æfre stáðolfæste = qui . . . hospitantur semper vâgi et
nunquam stabiles.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (3):

NSM. (3):—61. 11: forseonde hine he ne gedrefe = non spernendo eum contristet. [Cf. Benedict¹ 54. 14: he ǣah mid forseawennesse hine ne genmrotsige.]—114. 10ᵃᵇ: his unaecumenlichenesse se ǣ gewis [blank] ḷ gedafenlice [blank] na modigende [text: modigene] oðde wiðstandende [blank] = impossibilitatis sue causas ei qui sibi preest patienter et oportune sugerat, non superbiendo aut resistendo vel contradicendo. [Cf. Benedict¹ 128. 15, 16: Ææt he eft mid gedylde on gedafende tide his mægenleaste his ealdre geeþē, he no Ææah na wiðstande, ne mid modignesse ne wiðwæðē.]

Note 1.—It is possible to construe forseonde, modigende, and wiðstandende above as appositive participles, but it is also possible that they may be used here precisely as the Latin gerunds are; that is, they may be verbal nouns in an oblique case instead of verbal adjectives in the nominative case. Certainly yrnende in the following is a verbal noun: Benet¹ 3. 15: . . . n Ææs rices healle on inne gyf we wyllað [blank], buton [blank] mid godum dædom yrnende natesh-won ne bið becumem = (In) cujus regni tabernaculo si volumus habitare, nisi illue bonis actibus currendo minime pervenitur. [Cf. Benedict¹ 3. 9: Natoðæsh-won his rices eardung bið gefaren buton mid gymene and geheard-sunnesse godra dæda; ofst and hradung godra weorca is to Ææm rice wesges færelēd.] In all probability, too, onginnende and standende, corresponding respectively to a Latin gerundive and gerund, are verbal nouns, not verbal adjectives, in the following:—Benet¹ 105. 5ᵃᵇ: æfter endebyrdesse ǣa ǣa he gesette oððē ǣa ǣa habbað ǣa sylfau gebroðran hi ne genealaecan [blank] to huselgange to on * sealmum ginnende on choro standende = Ergo secundum ordines quos constituerit vel quos habnereint ipsi fratres si [read sic] accedant ad pacem, ad communionem, ad psalmum impoundum, in choro standum. [Cf.

*As Logeman (foot-note to p. 105) says, on belongs with ginnende.
Benedict¹ 115. 4, 5: ... gauge ælc æfter oðrum to cosse, to husle and be ðan on chore stande and sealmas and gehwyłce ỳenunga beginne.]

Note 2.—In the following the present participle that corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative seems in use to be a pure adverb:—Benet¹ 43. 4: ðæt is ðæt sig [blank] sungen butan antempe teonde æthwega swa swa on ðam sunnan die dræg = id est, ut sexagesimus sextus psalms dicatur sine antiphona subtrahendo modice sicut dominica. [Cf. Benedict¹ 37. 8: ðæt is ðæt se syxandsyxtigeða sealm ... sy geewedon butan antefene, and he sy on svege gelenedgæ hwæðwara calswa on sunndrægæ.]

—Benet 1 76. 3: ðane forði ỳallunga teonde lattlice we wyllað been gesæd = quem propter hoc omnino protrahendo et morose volumus dici. [Cf. Benedict¹ 68. 9: ỳonne we eac forði on ðam sanceg lenegad.]

II. With an Object (63).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (62):—

NSM. (32):—68. 1: sig hus cyte ofer hi betaht ðen adrætænde [blank] ð luþænde = sit cella super se deputata, et servitor timens demn et diligens. [Here and occasionally at other places deum is not glossed, perhaps because of its familiarity.]—34. 6: gelyfe ... geadmetænde hine sylfne = creadat ... humilians se.—Other examples:—29. 11: asmai-dand (MS. : asmaidan) = scrutans (or predicative?) ; 16. 8: behiwende = dissimilans ; 13. 8: oðrum bodiende = aliis predicans ; 104. 16: brucende (MS. : brucenne) anwealde = utens potestate ; 111. 8: donde = fæciens ; 61. 7: dæræende (MS. dredeenne) = timens ; 31. 16: geefenteæende = immittans ; 5. 3: gesyllænde = complens ; 29. 3: gehældænde = custodiens ; gehyrænde = audiens ; 3. 1, 17. 14; 35. 2: habænde = habens ; 98. 11: healdænde = reservans ; 31. 10: luþænde = amans ; 14. 14: mængææende tidenta tida = miscens temporibus tempora ; 109. 5: nimænde = sumens ; 2. 16: secænde
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 231

= quærens; 28. 14: secende [sic!] = ponens; seegende = dicens; 36. 5, 78. 10; 16. 9: taliende (MS.: taliendre) = pendens; 4. 7: tihende (MS.: tihende) = suadentem; 109. 2a: ſeccende = cogitans; 36. 4: venende = existimans; witend = scientes; 15. 12, 19. 3, 57. 4b, 97. 5, 103. 14; 1. 8: wítewende lустum = abrenuntiatus voluptibus.

NSF. (1):—98. 6: ðæt fers call seo gederung ſriendan siðan togeðedonde [text: -e cane] mid [blank] = Quem versus omnis congregatio tertio respondet adjungentes gloria patri. [The A.-S. has nothing corresponding to the Latin respondat. Of course, the A.-S. participle may be plural, as the Latin one is.]

NSN. (3):—27. 2: clypað us gewritt ðæt godeunda cala seccende (= seegende) = Clamat nobis scriptura divina fratres diecus. So seegende = dicens: 30. 14.—32. 7: gesutulende = ostendaus.

NPM. (19):—5. 16: ð gif fleonde helle wite life we wyllað becumun to ðam ecan = Et si fugientes geheunte jxenas ad vitam volumus pervenire perpetuam.—Other examples:—4. 11: ahwenende (= ah venende?) = existimantes; 12. 14: forhiægende = contemptentes; forhyægende = relinquentes: 23. 16, 24. 1; ib. = deserentes: 23. 17; 32. 12: geþyllende = adimplentes; 24. 11a: gehyrsumicende (w. dat.) = obedientes; healdende = servantes: 10. 9b; ib. = observantes: 117. 16; 51. 10: myndigende = commonentes; nimende = accipientes: 92. 7; ib. = assignentes: 109. 16; 3. 16: seegende = dicentes; ſeowende (ſcowicende) (w. dat.) = servientes: 11. 3, 67. 13; 109. 15b: venende = estimantes; witende = scientes: 107. 12, 116. 4.

GSM. (3):—31. 11: ðæs stefne drihtnes mid ðædum æc he gegefenlæçe seegendes = sed vocem illam domini factis imitetur dicentis. So seegendes = dicentis, 57. 4b. Cf. 109. 2a (ʃeccende gescad ðæs halgan iacobes seegende = cogitans discretionem sancti jacob dicentis.)

GPM. (1):—111. 5: swa hwænne swa geceost [blank] mid geðeæhte [blank] ondræidendra gode etc. = quemcumque elegerit abba cum consilio fratrum timentium deum.
DSF. (1):—3. 8: est [sic] luempre [blank] (δισσ)ere stefne [blank] geladgendre la ge ða leostan gebroðran = Quid dulcis nobis (ab hac) ac voce domini invitantis.

ASM. (1):—107. 7: ðæt [blank] for his leahtrum . . . geðafrendne (text: -enne) had mid gelicium geðæhłe gif geðysð = Quod si etiam omnis congregatio vitii sui . . . consentientem personam pari consilio elogerit.


2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (1):—

NSM. (1):—31. 5: ariende = parcendo.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (39).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (30).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (30):—

NSM. (15):—59. 6: þeah þe he amansumad hit ne gebet teartere genealæce ðreiungan = etiam si excommunicatus non emendaverit acrior ci accedat corripio.—Other examples:—

100. 3: beþæht (MS. beþæhð) = deceptus; 68. 1: fulfremed = sollicitus; 77. 13: geasindrod = sequestratus; 97. 17: gebeden = vagatus; 107. 14: gehadod = ordinatus; 78. 14: gehaten = jussus; 104. 6: geminegod = ammonius; 54. 7b: geðreat = correptus; 2. 5: geýrsod = irritatus; 78. 11: pro ofered = stratus; 12. 11: tolysed = absolutus; 98. 17: unsweryd = exutus; upalhafen = elatus: 59. 9, 61. 5.

NSF. (1):—36. 12: sona to ðære soðan lufan godes becmð to ðære fulfremed ut seo asend ege = mox ad karitatem dei perveniet illam que perfecta foras mittit timorem.

NSN. (1):—70. 17: an pund awegen genihtsumige on dege = Panis libera una propensa sufficiat in die.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 233

NPM. (10):—10. 7: ða on ænigum regole na afundode vel [sic] ðæ afundennessa lærowas . . . leogan gode . . . synd ænawene = qui nulla regula approbati experientia magisti . . . mentiri deo . . . nosuntur.—Other examples:—
113. 9: astreh (MS.: astrehð) = prostrati; 44. 11: gecyrde = conversi; 10. 1ª: gehærde = docti; 32. 14: genydde = angarizati; 76. 10: gesawene = visi; 75. 5ª: gesette = positi; 10. 1ª: getyde = instructi; 10. 9ª: nexeode = molliti; 109. 15ª: tobrædde = inflati.

ASM. (2):—118. 12: ðysne ðane læstan acunnednesse regol aut betrayed yilstendum criste ðu gefremme = hanc minimam inchoationis regulam discriptam adjuvante christo perficias; 20. 10: gedonne = factam.

APF. (1):—92. 15: [b]rec ðas ða [blank] beoð asende on hregehlhuse niman ða hi gecyrrende geðwagen ðara agenbringan = Femuralia hi qui in via diriguntur de vestario accipiant qui revertentes lota ibi restuant. [Is the -u of geðwagen due to lota, and is geðwagen to be considered a neuter despite the gender of [b]rec?]

Note.—In the following, gewunede and gedilhte appear to be used as adverbs: —92. 16: cuflan þ tonican beon oðer-hwilen synd gewunede sunt [sic] habban æðwigan betaran = Cuculle et tunice sint aliquanto solito quas habent modice meliores; 40. 11: sittendum callum gedilhte þ be endebyrd-nyssse on seanolum = residentibus eunctis dispose et per ordinem in subselliis.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (9).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (9):—

NSM. (1):—54. 7ª: ðæt ænig of ðam on sumere færunga tobræd modignesse gif bið gemet teallie etc. = Quod si quisque ex eis aliqua forte inflatus superbia repertus fuerit reprehensibilis etc.
GSF. (1):—16. 7: sæt he na sæt an nyðerunge æfwyrðe heorde him sylfan befiestre ðolige = ut non solum detrimenta gregis sibi commissi non patiatur.

GPF. (1):—16. 9: hele saule him sylfan bifèstra = salutem animarum sibi commissarum.

DSN. (1):—57. 3*: ana [blank] to weorce [blank] to betæhtum = Solus sit ad opus sibi injunctum.

DPM. (1):—31. 1: § gif fram englum [blank] betæhtum = et si ab angelis nobis deputatis.

DPN. (1):—75. 4: on ðam sylfum betæhtum him sylfum ðingum = in assignato sibi commissio.

ASM. (1):—104. 4: se [blank] regol fram decanum ððde fram pravostum him sylfum gesetne gehealden wite = qui tamen regulam a decanis vel prepositis sibi constitutam servare sciat.

ASF. (2):—104. 15: se ne abbod gedrefe befieste him sylfum heorde = Qui Abbas non conturbet gregem sibi commissam; 62. 15: him betæhte = sibi commissum.

II.—IN THE POEMS.

A.—LONGER POEMS.

BEOWULF (91).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (23).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (19).

NSM. (9):—2272: se þe byrnende biorgas seeceð; ib. 2569 (or pred. ?); 815: wæs gehwaðer ððrum lifigende lað.—
Other examples:—2219: slepende; 2235: ðænohyegende; 2518: unbyrnende; 708: weccende; 2062: wigende (or lifigende ?); 2716: wishyegende.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 235

NSF. (1):—1953: sær hio síðan wel ... lifgesceafa lifgenda breac.

NPM. (2):—916: Hwilum flitende fealwe stræte mearum mæton; 2850: hy seamunde scyldas bæran.

N. Dual M. (1):—535: Wit sæt geccwodon cníhtwesende.

DSM. (2):—1389: sæt bið dríhtguman umlifgendum after selest; 1187: gif he sæt eal gemon, hwæt wit to willan and to wordýnyndum umbor-wesendum ær arna gefremedon (or subst. here?).

ASM. (3):—2781: ligegeasan wæg hatne for horde, híoroweallende; 372: ìc hine cæðe cníhtwesende; 46: ðe hine æt frumsceæfte forð onsendon ænne ofer yðæ umbor wesende.

APM. (1):—1581: slepende fræt folces ðenigea fyftyne men.

II. With Object (4).

NSM. (3):—2106: gomela Seálding fæla friegende fæorran rehte (but Köhler considers fæla an adverb); 2350: for ðon he ær fæla nearo neðende niða gedigde; 1227: Beo ðu suna minum dædam gedeþe dream healdende. [Should we not write dream-healdende, as Grein does in his Glossary? Cf. dream-hebbendra in Genesis 81. Köhler considers healdende as substantivized.]

NPM. (1):—1829: Gif ic sæt gefriege ofer floda begang, sæt ðec ymbesitend egesan ðywað, swa ðec helende hwilum dydon, ic ðe ðusenda ðegna bringe, hæleda to helpe (or a substantivized participle, as Köhler holds).

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (68).

I. Without an Object (18).

NSM. (9):—1351: ðæs earmæccapan on wærestum wæstumum wraelastas træd (may be considered substantivized as by Köhler); 2569: Gewat ða byrnende gebogen seriðan (or pred.?); 846: hu he ... on nicera mere fiege and gefylmed
feorhlæstas bær; ib. 1370; 2852: He gewergad sæt; 868: guma *gilphæden* or attrib.?; 262: Wæs min fæder folcum gecyðed, ææele ordfruna Eegæow haten (may be pred.); 1913: Cool up geðræng, lyftgeswened on lande stod; 2443: sceolde hwaðre swa ðæah ææeling unwweeen cældres linnan.

NSF. (2):—614: even Hroðgares ... grette goldhroden guman on healle; ib. 1948.

NSN. (1):—3012: ac ðær is maðma hord, gold unrime grimme geæapod (may be pred.).

NS. M. or N. (1):—3085: Hord is gesæawod, grimme gegongen.

NPM. (1):—1819: we sæliðend seegan wyllæð, seorran cumene, sæt etc.

NPN. (2):—59: Ææem feower bearn forð gerimed in woruld wocum.—Other examples:—3049: ðurhetone (or pred.?).

DSM. (1):—1479: sæt ðu ma a wære forðgewitenum on fæder stæle (cf. Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 16).

APF. (1):—1937: ac him wæłbende weotode tealde, hand-geææene.

II. With an Object (50).

NSM. (27):—1113: wæs edgesyne ... ææeling manig wundum aæyrded; 721: Com ... rine siðian dreamum bedæled; ib. 1275.—Other examples:—1451: befængen free-

wrasnum; 2274: fyre befængen; ib. 2595; 531: beore dræneen; 1467: wine ——; 2580: bysigum gebæded; 3117: strengum gebæded; 2359: bille gebeaten; 2401: torne ge-

bolgen; 2111: eldo gebunden; 923: eystum gecyðed; 217: winde gefysed; 630: guðe gefysed; 2309: fyre gefysed; 1005: nyde genyded (Wülckerhas genydde); 975: synnum gesweneed; 1368: hundum gesweneed; 1285: hamere ge-

suren; 250: wæpnum geweorðad; 1450: since ——; 1038: since gewurðad; 1645: dome ——; 2255: hyrsted golde; 845: niða ofercumen.
NSF. (5):—1443: scolde herebyrne hondum gebroden, sid and searofah sund cunnian.—Other examples:—3018: golde bereafol; 1333: fylle gef(r)ægnod; 777: golde geregnad; 624: mode geśungen.

NSN. (5):—553: beadohrægl... on breostum læg, golde gegeyrved.—Other examples:—2680: niðe genyded; 2761: searwum geseld; 2441: fyrenum geseyngad; 406: seowed smiðes orðanecum.

NS. M. or N. (1): 3146: astah... swogende leg wope bewunden.

NPM. (3):—1126: Gewiton him ða wigend wica neosian freondum befealden Frysland geseon; 480: Fúl oft gebeotedon beore druvene ofer ealowæge oretmeegas.—Other examples:—3014: feore gebohte.

ASM. (1):—3139: Him ða gegiredan Geata leode ad on eordan unwacliene, helnum behogen.

ASF. (2):—2931: bryd aheorde, gomela iomeowlan golde berofène.—Other examples:—2192: golde gegeyrde.

ASN. (2):—1900: He ðæm batwearde bwned golde swurd gesælde; 1531: wearp ða wundenmæl wresetum gebunden yrre oretta (though some consider gebunden as nom.).

AS. M. or N. (1):—2769: Swylce he siomian geseah segn eallgylden, ... gelocen leodosæcræftum.

APM. (1):—1028: ne gefrægni ec freondlicor feower madmas golde gegeyrde gummannæ fela in ealobence oðrum gesellan.

APN. (2):—2762: Geseah... fyrmanna fatu feormend-lease hyrstum behrove ne; 871: sóðe gebunden.

Note 1.—Köhler reads ealo drincende in 1945, and considers drincende an appositive participle; I retain Wülker’s ealodrincende, which is a substantive.

Note 2.—The text is too defective to admit of classifying the following: 304: gehroden; 1031: bewunden; 2229: earm sceapan; 2230: sceapan; 3151: wunden.
A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (10).

I. Without Object (10).

NSM. (3):—1583: ac he hlihende broðrum sægde.—Other examples:—874: sceomiente; 347: sorgiende.
   NSF. (1):—890: gilsiende.
   NSN. (1):—560: willende.
   NPM. (1):—2066: hlihende.
   GPF. (1):—81: ðrymnuas weoxon duguða mid drihtne dreamhæbbendra.

DSM. (2):—2663: ðæt ic ðe lissa lifsegendum giet on dagum læte duguða brucan, since gesundne; 2649: ñægde ær ðæt wif hire wordum sefa unfriegendum, ðæt etc.
   ASM. (1):—2169: ac ic ðe lifsegende her wið weana gehwam wreo ð seylde.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (32).

I. Without Object (11).

NSM. (4):—1571: Swiðe on slæpe sefa nearwode, ðæt he ne mihte on gemynd drepen hine handum self mid hrægle wryon.—Other examples:—725: gehugod; 481: gewanod; 1799: haten (may be pred., as Seyfarth holds).
   GPM. (1):—1836: feorren cumæura.
   GPN. (1):—1185: wintra gebidæura etc.
   ASM. (1):—1865: geðreadæne.
   ASF. (2):—165: ætæowde; 549: gesceapene (or pred.?).
   ASN. (1):—2022: forslegen (or attrib.?).
   APN. (1):—1520: besmilen.

II. With Object (21).

NSM. (9):—930: dugeðum bevedled; 2099: eorlum bedroven; 2124: seegum befylled; 2605: wine drunecn;
1818: drihtne geccoren; 2668: egesan ge&read; 2137: elne gewurdod; 32: ni&es of&yrsted; 2740: bleowfe&rum &eah (or pred.?).

NPM. (5):—86: leohhe belorene; 76: &ystrum be&eahte; 1734: metode geccoren; 1693: bleo&rum gedcelde; 2002: eegum of&egde.

NPF. (2):—2082: dome bedrocere; 2010: freoundum be- &slægene.


ASN. (2):—1263: hundtwelfig geteled rimes wintra; 2344: geteled rimes.

APN. (1):—1336: &u seofone genim on &et sundreced &udu gehwilces geteled rimes.

Note.—Seyfarth considers the following as appositive participles:—188: unwundod, 319: fylde, 1472: li&end, 2480: &earfende. But, in The Abs. Ple. in A.-S. (p. 17), I have shown that unwundod is used predicatively, and that fylde is a finite verb. The form of li&end seems to me to show that it is a substantive. I consider that &earfende is used substantively, as does Dietrich (quoted by Wülder).—In 2603, geneearwood, the text is too defective to admit of classification.

EXODUS (12).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (3).

NSF. (1):—213: Wo&ecende bad call seo sibgedriht somod &etgedere marau maegenes.

NPM. (2):—452: flugon forhtigende (or pred.?); 264: &ijigende.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (9).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (3).

NPN. (1):—497: synfullra sweot sawluum lunnon fieste beftarene.
ASM. (1):—412: unweaxenne.
ASN. (1):—232: x. hund geteled tireadigra.

II. With Object (6).

NSM. (3):—532²: wrecceum alyfæd; 532¹: womanum aeryged; 549: mihtum sveðed.
NSF. (1):—580: golde gevecorðod.
NPM. (1):—36: swæfon seledreamas since berofene.
ASN. (1):—372: geteled rime.

DANIEL (13).

A.—The Present Participle (5).

I. Without Object (3).

NSM. (2):—687: hamsittende (or attrib.?); 573: lifyende.
NPM. (1):—296²: lifyende.

II. With Object (2).

NSM. (2):—355: ðær ða dædhwatan geond ðone ofen eodon ð se engel mid, feorn aerigende; 396: ðee ... gastas losað liffrean, lean sellende callum ... [defective ms.] eee drihten.

B.—The Preterite Participle (8).

I. Without Object (1).

ASM. (1):—521: gesæledne.

II. With Object (7).

NSM. (3):—736: drihtne geecorene; 184²: mode gefreconod; 184¹: mane gemenged.
NSN. (1):—556: treow ... telgum besnedod.
NPM. (3):—296¹: lige belegde; 92: metode geecorene; 259: aldre generede.
Note.—Spaeth considers 696 (Sæton him æt wine wealle belocene) as appositive, but the participle is rather predicative after sæton.

**CYNEWULF'S CHRIST** (65).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (14).

I. Without Object (13).

NSM. (3):—176: Hwæt bemurnest ðu, cleopast ceari-gende?—Other examples:—426: forðgongende; 1324: unscow-mende.

NSF. (4):—1160: Hell eac ongeat scegldwrecende ðæt etc.; 1016: sorgende; 1584: seriscende; 288: Srísthyegende.

NPM. (4):—950: brecende; 387: bremende; 90: georm-rende; 992: ravende.


ASM. (1):—1391: ða ic ðe on ða fegræn foldan gesette to neotenne neorxawonges beorhtne blædwelan, bleom seinende.

II. With Object (1).

NPM. (1):—1271: on ðam hi awo sculon wrec seinende wærgðu dreogan. [Grein¹ and Gollancz¹k² write as a com-pound, wæcreinende.]

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (51).

I. Without Object (15).

NSM. (2):—475: æowæð Waldend engla, gefysed, Frea miltig, to Fieder rice; 970: Grornað gesargad eal mid-dangeard (but Hertel considers it predicative after an intransitive verb).

NSF. (3):—1065: aræred; 1087: biscon (or pred.?); 380: geblissad.

NSN. (2):—218: acenned; 961: gesargad.
NPM. (3):—1229: arasode; 1298¹: ascamode; 1274: fordone.

NPN. (2):—1223: Donne beoð gesomnad ða clænan folc . . . georce ne bi æystum; 1071: Donne weoroda mest fore Waldende, ece and edgeong, ondweard geða, neode ond nyde bi noman gehatne (may be masc., as Cook gives it).

GPM. (1):—179: Ne ic culpan in ðe, incan ænigne æfre onfunde, womma geworhtra.

ASN. (1):—890: mon mæg sorgende folc gehyran, hyge-geomor, hearde gefyseyd, ceare cwiden ende cwicra gewyrhtu, forhte afserde.

APN. (1):—892: afarde (quoted under ASN. 889 above).

II. With Object (36).

NSM. (6):—625: ond to ðære ilcan scealt eft geweordan wurnum awcallen.—Other examples:—725: clæðum be-wunden (or pred.?) ; 1407: bidæled dugeðum ond dreamum ; 1432: mane —— ; 1206: deaðfirenum fordon ; 10½ mon-num sended.

NSF. (4):—192: ðonne sceal Danides dohtor sweltan, stanum astyfled.—Other examples:—1085: blode bestemed (or pred.?) ; 908: gebleod wundrum ; 292: beaga hroden.

NS. N. or M. (1):—1139: ðæs temples segl, wundor-bloom geworht to white ðæs huses, sylf slat on tu.

NPM. (21):—940: steorran swa some stredað of heofone, ðurh ða strongan lyft stornum abeatne.—Other examples:—1525: reedum birofene ; 1519: willum biscyredæ ; 1643²: sorgum biwerede ; 1643¹: sibbum biswæðæ ; 831: wæulum biwerccæ ; 1642: leolte biwundne ; 1103: firenum fordon ; 1356: adle gebundæ ; 1538: lege gebundæ ; 993: hreowum gedrecæ ; 1298²: seondum —— ; 1508: dryncæ —— ; 1644¹: dreamum gedyrede ; 393: swegele gehyrste ; 1644²: Dryhtne geliyde ; 149: suslum gestæhte ; 385: dome geswæðæ ; 986: sundes getwæfde ; 1509: ðurste geswægedæ ; 447: hræglum gewerede.
GSM. (1):—20: Eadga us siges oðrum forweyrned, wlitigan wilsidæs, gif his weore ne deag.
DPM. (1):—151: bring us hælofif wergum wite-seowum, wope forcymenum.
ASF. (1):—120: Nu we hyhtfulle hælo gelyfað ðurh ðet Word Godes weorudum brungen.
APM. (1):—873: sleæpe gelæconde.

Note.—In 891 (mon maeg sorgende folc gehyran, hyge-geomor, hearde gefyset, cearam ewiænde ewira gewyrhtu), Hertel considers ewiænde appositive, but to me it seems to be used predicatively as a second accusative.

**ELENE (26).**

**A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (9).**

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (7).

NSM. (3):—352: swa hit eft be eow Essaias ... wordum mælde, deophyeggende ðurh dryhtnes gast; ib. 881; 951: witerhyeggende.
NSF. (1):—449: Ne maeg ... Ebreæ ðæod radæcahtende rice healdan.
NPF. (1):—906: sawla ne moton manfremmende in minum leng æhtum wunigan.
DSM. (1):—810: Sie ðæ, maegenæ god, ðrymsittendum ðanc butan ende.
ASM. (1):—795: Forlæt nu ... wynsumme up under radores ryne rec astigan lyftlaecende.

II. WITH OBJECT (2).

GPM. (1):—1096: ðæ se halga ... eode gumena ðræte god hergendra.
DPM. (1):—1220: ðæ callum bebead on ðam gumrice god hergendum, werum and wifum, ðet etc. (Schürmann: substantivized).
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (17).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (3).

NSN. (1):—1226: nærost beama, §ara §e of eordan up aweoxe geloden under leafum.

GPM. (1):—992: Næs §a friegendra under goldhoman gad in burgum feorræn geferede [Sievers as quoted by Wülker: gefereda?].

ASM. (1):—529: mec ñæder min . . . unneaxenne wordum lærde.

II. WITH OBJECT (14).

NSM. (6):—697: cleopigan ongan sarum besyled.—Other examples:—932: sarum fæsoht; 1128: egesan gæcelod; 720: hungre gehyned; 1263: wirum gævelenced; 1094: breostum onbryrded.

NSF. (1):—331: on ñrymme bad . . . geatolic guðewen golde gehyrsted.

NSN. (2):—2: Da was agangen geara hwyrstum tu hund j ðero geteled rimes; 634: geteled rime.

NPM. (2):—766: dreogad deæewale in draæan ðæðme ðeostrum forðylmed; 263: hyrstum gæwerede.

NPN. (1):—883: leomu colodon ðæneædum beðæah.t.

GPN. (1):—1284: Secall reghwylye . . . worda swa same wed gesyllan, callra unsnyttrœ ær gespréwenra.

ASM. (1):—1058: ðæt he gesette . . . Iudas ðam folce to bïsceope . . . craeftum gæcorene.

Note.—Schiirmann (p. 368) considers the following appositive, but I substantive:—279: meðelhegende; 395: synwyr- eende. On the other hand, as the statistics show, I have classified as appositive participles several words that he considers as substantives.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 245

JULIANA (28).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (11).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (10).

NSM. (5) :—68: Ḟa reordode rices hyrde wið ðære 
fiænnan fæder frecne mode daraheabbende; 281: lyft-
læcende; 137: ðe ðu hæstlice manfremmende to me beotast 
(or subst.?); 445: sceal nu lange ofer ðis weylwyrcende 
scane ðrowian; 261: siðende.

NSF. (1) :—252: gleawhyægende.

NSN. (1) :—648: ic leof weorud læran wille afrem-
mende, etc.

NPM. (1) :—662: wæceende.

DSF. (1) :—196: wiðerhyægendre.

ASM. (1) :—435: ƿyrmsittende (cf. Phœnix 623).

II. WITH OBJECT (1).

GPM. (1) :—6: geat on græswong god hergenda hæðen 
hildfruma haligra blod ryhtfremmendra. [Gollancz has 
god-hergend[ð]a, in which case we have a substantive.]

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (17).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (7).

NSM. (5) :—411: acyrred; 320: afongen; 417: bifolen;
2621: gleþungen; 2622: sended (or pred., as Conradi holds?).

GPN. (1) :—686: wiðerda.

ASM. (1) :—617: awyrgeadne.

II. WITH OBJECT (10).

NSM. (4) :—350: faene bifongen; 203: niða gebeched; ib.
462; 582: yrre geholgen.
NSF. (2):—241: heolstre bihelmad; 535: breostum inbryrded.
NPM. (4):—681: hroðra bidæl hyhta lease helle sohton.—Other examples:—486: beore drunene; 13: ðædum gedeolene; 490: sarum gesohte.

GUTHLAC (42).
A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (11).
I. Without Object (10).
NSM. (1):—1085: lac onsægde deophyegende dryhtne to willan.
NPM. (7):—203: sceoldon wræcneægas ofgiefan gnornende grene beorgas; ib. 651; 117: ðonan sið tugon, wide wæðe wuldre beseyrede lyftæcende.—Other examples:—401: mun-nende; 828: scuendæ; 879: weðende; 635: wiðerhyegende.
NPF. (1):—1250: wyrtæ . . . hunyflightæ.
GSM. (1):—1190: neosendæ.

II. With Object (1).
NSM. (1):—1029: ac he hate let torn ðolendæ tearas geotan. [Furkert considers ðolendæ predicative after let, but incorrectly I think. Cf. Judith 272.]

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (31).
I. Without Object (8).
NSM. (5):—911: Hreðer innan born afyzed on forðsið.—Other examples:—1286: aræred; 662: gegeawad; 1287: gesæwen; 913: ungeblýged.
NSN. (1):—1282: lic colode belifd under lyfte.
NPF. (1):—1249: wyrtæ geblowæ.
NPN. (1):—1263: scadu sweðredon tolyzed under lyfte.
II. With Object (23).

NSM. (8):—1127: awrecen wælpilum; 1260: ... wælstre- 

lum; 967: flæsce *bifongen*; 1143: leana biloren; 1004: 

folderne *biscæht*; 640: attre *geblonden*; 1126: nearwum 

geneged; 1274: husle *gerecorded*.

NSF. (1):—1325:—*Sonne seo ðrag eymeð wefen wyrd-

stæfum* (or pred.?).

NSN. (1):—888: him to honda hungre *geðreatad* fleag 

fugla cyn.

NPM. (7):—116: wuldre *byscyrede*; 873: dreamum *bidro-

rene*; 872: hiwes *binotene*; 1047: wilna *biscyrede*; 645: 

wuldre *biscyrede*; 858: adle *gebundne*; 1046: æc in lige 

secelon sorgwyllum *soden* sar wanian.

NPN. (2):—930: leomu hefegedon sarum *gesohte*; ib. 

1003.

ASM. (3):—1312: life *bilidenne*; 992: is me ... *geðuht,

ðæt ðe untrymnes adle gongum on ðisse nylstan niht bys-

gade, sarbennum *gesoht*; 1118: feorhhord onleac searocegum 

*gesoht*.

APM. (1):—740: leohте *gerohte*.

RIDDLES (44).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (8).

I. Without Object (8).

NSM. (4):—13. 14: *lifgende*; ib. 29. 9; 3. 8: *winnende*; 

41. 107: wroldende.

NSN. (1):—49. 4: *sinс for secgum swigende cwæð*.

NS. F. or N. (1):—84. 5: wiht ... *ferende*.

NPM. (1):—17. 6: hi beoð swīðran *Sonne ic ð mee 

slītende sona flymað*.

GSF. (1):—55. 5: *stondendre*. 

THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 247
B.—The Preterite Participle (36).

I. Without Object (9).

NSM. (4):—72. 12: bounden; 24. 16: searosed; 2.
11: sended; 24. 15: unbunden.
NS. F. or N. (1):—24. 2: ic eom wraetic wiht on gewin sceapen.
NSN. (1):—31. 2¹: bewunden.
NPM. (1):—12. 6¹: gemædæde.

II. With Object (27).

NSM. (12):—28. 14: mægene bimmæn; 28. 13: strenge bistolen; 3. 9: holmmægne bißeaht; 18. 2: gefylled dryht-
streona (or pred. ?); 2. 10: holme gehrefæd; 71. 8: hringsum gehyrsted; 4. 66: mealhtum gemanad; 41. 85: gewefen wundorercæfte; 91. 4: hringum gyrdæd; 5. 2: hringum hæftæd; 11. 4: yðum ðeaht; ib. 17. 3.
NSF. (5):—27. 6: sindrum begrunden; 71. 1: reade bewæfed (or pred. ?); 32. 20: fræwæd hrystum; 4. 22: eare geblonden; 32. 10: geæren cæærum.
NSN. (2):—31. 3: fyre gebysgæd (or pred. ?); 31. 2²: wedæ gesæmnæd (or pred. ?).
PN. (1):—27. 14: wraetic weorc smiða wire bïforgen.
ASF. (1):—87. 2: wombe dryðum gedrungæne.
ASN. (2):—24. 8: spilde geblonden; 30. 3: listum geyrved.

Note 1.—Two Latin appositive participles occur in the Riddles, but are not translated into Anglo-Saxon:—90. 4¹ & 2: Dum starem et mirarem, vidi gloriam magnam: duo lupi stantes et tertium tribul[antes] III pedes habebant, cum septem oculis videbant.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 249

Note 2.—The defective text precludes the classification of the following:—78. 7: bewrigene; 83. 3 and 4: lief bewunden, fyre gefelsad; 84. 40: wuldrum gewlitedad.

A. THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (7).

I. Without Object (4).

NSM. (3):—1557: hean, hygegeomor, heofende sprèc; 378: ðæg ne wende, ðæt he lifigende land þegete; 59: He ða wepende weregum tearum his sigedryhten sargan reorde, grette.

GSM. (1):—528: ðu eyninges eart ðegen ... ðrymsittendes.

II. With Object (3).

NSM. (2):—570: æðelinge weox word þ wisdom, ah he þara wundra a dom agende dæl ænigne frætre ðeode beforan cyðde; 300: Him ða ofstlice Andreas wið wine ðearfende wordum melde (cf. Guthlac 1321, where wineðearfende is substantive).

DPF. (1):—491: Ic wæs on gifedæ in þ nu syxtyne sidum on sæbate, mere hrerendum mundum freorig, eagarstreamas.

B. THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (26).

I. Without Object (12).

NSM. (6):—78: ðy lès ic lungre seyle ablended in burgum ... len þrowian.—Other examples:—1299: awerged; 267: bewunden; 1127: gehæfted; 4362: gesredted; 4361: gesyd.

NSN. (1):—1529: sund grunde onþeng deoþe gedrefed.

NPM. (1):—665: næs ðær folces ma ... sina leoda nemne ellefne orettmægægas, geteled tireadige.

GPM. (1):—24: hie blod and fel, fira flæschoman feorran cumenra ðegen.
ASM. (1):—1651: Ðær se ær godes ænne gesette wisfæstne wer, ... þ gehalgode ..., Platan nenned.

ASF. (1):—646: ic on þæ sylfum soð oncnawe wisdomes gewit wundorcræfte, sigespæd gesæld (or fact. ?).

APM. (1):—883: swylce we gesegon for suna meotudes ... eowic standan, twelfe getealde, tireadige hæleð.

II. With Object (14).

NSM. (5):—309: þæt þu seborugas secan woldes, mere-streama gemet, máðmum bedeled.—Other examples:—1314: dugðum bereafod; 413: billum foregrunden; 983: elne gefyræd; 1313: myrce gescyrded.

NSN. (1):—772: mordre bewunden.

NPM. (4):—1631: wituæ aspeæde; 1618: wuldre bescyrede; 1003: dreore druncæ; 746: mode gemyrde.

DSM. (1):—487: þæt þu me getæhte ... hu þu wæglotæn waren bestædæ, sehengæste sund wisige.

ASF. (1):—675: he lungre ahof wode ... wean onblonden.

ASN. (1):—1035: geleådde ... on frið dryhtnes tu þ hundteontig geteled rime (cf. Andr. 665 and Elene 2, 634).

APN. (1):—1046: weorod on wlsið wolænum bêæhte.

Note.—The ms. is too defective to classify 1025: gewyrht.

---

**Phoenix (26).**

**A.—The Present Participle (4).**

I. Without Object (4).

NSM. (1):—368: forðon he drusende deað ne bisorgað.

NSF. (1):—502: Sonne þeos woruld seyldwyræende in some byrneð.

GPM. (1):—178: calra beama on eorðwege uplædendra.

DSM. (1):—623: ond þæ sone sy srymcyningæ thronum sedens; and ib. 25: to þæodæ thronum regenti.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 251

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (22).

I. Without Object (7).

NSM. (3):—525: afæred; 180: gescylded; 160: gedungen.
NPM. (1):—592: gebredade.
NPF. (2):—226: geedungne; 541: georene.
ASN. (1):—274: gefratwed.

II. With Object (15).

NSF. (1):—503: ade onæled.
NSN. (1):—62: lyfte gebysgad.
NPM. (1):—633: manes amerede.
ASF. (2):—1701 k2: biholene y bihydde monegum.
APM. (1):—488: sawlum binumene.

METRES OF BOETHIUS (13).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (6).

I. Without Object (6).

NSM. (1):—2. 2: Hwaet ic liða fela lustlice geo sang on selum! nu sceal ñfigende wope gevæged wrecce a giomor singan sarewidas = Boeth.2 3. 2: Carmina qui quondam studio florente peregi, flebilis in másitos coger iníre modos.
NSF. (3):—20. 221: ñonne hio ymb hi selfe secende smeæs; ñb. 20. 214; 20. 212: hwarfeð ymbbe hy selfe oft smeægende ymb etc.
NSN. (1):—3. 4: ñonne hit winnende his agen leoth anforlæða.
NPF. (1):—11. 34: Swa hæfð geheáderod hefonrices weard mid his anwealde ealle gesceafa, sæt hiora æghwilc wið ofer windā, þ þeah winnende wresìad fæste = Boeth.²
48. 3: Quod pugnantia semina fœcus perpetum tenet.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (7).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (4).

NSM. (1):—1. 82: forðōht.
NSF. (1):—6. 15: geondstyred.
NPM. (1):—25. 7: wynbestandne = Boeth.² 95. 2: sceptos.
APM. (1):—19. 4: alceded (perhaps should be alcedës, as Grein conjectures).

II. WITH OBJECT (3).

NSM. (1):—2. 3: wope gewaged (see Latin under 2. 2 above).
NSN. (1):—3. 8: sorgum geswenced.
NPM. (1):—25. 6: golde gegerede.

THE METRICAL PSALMS¹ (37).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (17).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (13).

NSM. (2):—50. 75 (Cot.): ūonne ic . . . ofer snawe self seinende ðine sibbe lufan sona gemete = et super nivem dealbabor; 77. 65¹: slepende = dormiens.
NPM. (5):—50. 56 (Cot.): cernende = o; 125. 5¹ & ²: gangende þ ferende georne wepað = euntes ibant et flebant; 146. 10: se þe mete syleð manegum neatum, breñhes briddum, ūonne heo hropende him cigæð to = Qui dat jumentis escam ipsorum, et pullis corvorum invocantibus eum; 113. 25: lifigende = qui vivimus.
The appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon. 253

DSN. (1):—82. 6: mid *cardiendum* folce in Tyrum = cum habitantibus Tyrum.

DPM. (1):—140. 6: mid mannum *manfremendum* = cum hominibus operantibus iniquitatem.

ASN. (2):—140. 4: sete swæse geheald swylce, drihten, muðe minum (ne læt man sprecan) ðæle dor ymb-standende, ðæt on welerum wisdom healde = Pone, Domine, custodiam ori meo; et ostium *circumstantia* labiis meis; 57. 6: yrnende = currus.

APM. (2):—68. 25: *gramhicgende* = o; 123. 2: *lifigende* = vivos.

II. With Object (4).

NSM. (2):—104. 10: and him ða mid soðe sægende, *cévedende* = Et statuit . . . dicens; 105. 4: Genumus us, drihten, on modsefan forð *byegende* folces ðines ðæs mid helo her genesoa = Memento nostri, Domine, in bene-placito populii tui; visita nos in salutari tuo.

NPM. (1):—138. 17: Blodhreowe weras! ge bebugað me, ðe æt on geðohtum ðeneæð *cévedende* = Viri sanguinum declinate a me; quia *dicilis* in cogitationibus vestris.

GSM. (1):—105. 17: Hi . . . ongunnan . . . onwendan heora wuldr on ðæne wyrsan had hæfstenyra hig *etendes* = et mutaverunt gloriæ suam in similitudinem comedentis foenum.

B.—The preterite participle (20).

I. Without Object (9).

NSM. (3):—115. 6: ðınre ðeowon sunu on ðe *açenned* = filius ancillæ tuae; 148. 9: *alaedæd* = o; 50. 74: *geclansod* = mundabor.

NSF. (2):—50. 127 (Cot.): hiorte *geclansod* = cor contritum; 143. 10: Ic . . . singe on psalterio, ðe him swyansað oft mid tyn strenum *gelogen* hearpe = cantabo tibi; in psalterio decem chordarum psallam tibi.
II. With Object (11).

NSM. (2):—77. 65²: wine *druncen* = *crapulatus* a *vino*; 54. 24: bealuinwites feene *gefylded* = *dolosi*.

NSF. (1):—50. 128 (Cot.): *hiorte* . . . *geeadmeded* inge-

NSP. (1):—50. 51 (Cot.): *hiorte* . . . *geeadmeded* inge-

NPF. (1):—50. 128 (Cot.): *hiorte* . . . *geeadmeded* inge-

NPN. (3):—106. 36: *syðnan* greowan lungre land heora

aloden wæstnum = Et seminaverunt agros, et plantaverunt

vinas, et fecerunt fructum nativitatis; 148. 10: fugla cynn

fiðerum *geeyrped* = volucres pennatae (may also be sin-

lar); 67. 17: wærum cæta tun ðusendo *geteled* rime =

currus Dei decem millibus multiplex.

DSN. (1):—67. 26: on ðinum temple tidum *gehaldgod*,

ðæt ys on Hierusalem = a templo sancto tuo quod est in H.

(or NSM.?).

ASF. (2):—59. 8: weallum *beworhte* = *munitam*; 131. 5:

stowe drihtne *gecoren* = locum Domino.

APN. (1):—106. 32: He on westene wynne streamas

soðfiest sette, ðær he sarig folc *gedewde* ðurste ða blissade =

Quia posuit flumina in desertum, et exitus aquarum in

sitim.
B.—MINOR POEMS.*

AZARIAS (2).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NPM. (1):—16\^2: lifigende.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NPM. (1):—16\^1: lege bilegde.

CALENDAR OF SAINTS (4).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without Object (2).

NSM. (2):—7: for\^y se kalend us cyne\^d ge\^inged on \^sam ylcan d\^ege; 164: \^sette Haligmon\^d hele\^dum ge\^inged fere\^d to folce.

II. With Object (2).

NSM. (2):—142: wastmum hladen; 205: forste gfe-terad (may be ace.).

CHARMS (4).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—r. 74: Ful occer fodres fira cinne beorht- blowende, \^Su gebletsod weor\^d.

*The text of the Ruin is so defective that I have taken no account of this poem.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (3).

I. Without Object (2).

ASN. (1):—i. 61: heo si geborgen wið calra bealwa gehwyle, ðara lyblaca geond land sawen.
APN. (1):—i. 64: ðæt awendan ne mæge word ðus gecwedene.

II. With Object (1).

NSM. (1):—viii. 30: Iohannes wuldre gewlitegod.

CHRIST’S DESCENT INTO HELL, RESURRECTION, ASCENSION, AND APPEARANCE AT FINAL JUDGMENT (4).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without Object (1).

APM. (1):—81: gebeged.

II. With Object (3).

NSM. (1):—172: dome gewurðad.
NSN. (2):—284: wynnum bewunden; 283: gimmum gefrætewed.

CREED (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

ASM. (1):—10: cyning, hider asendne.

DOOMSDAY (5).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

I. Without Object (2).

NSM. (1):—25¹: murenigende cwæð.
NPM. (1):—231: deriende gedwæð.
II. With Object (1).

NPN. (1):—112: cumað hider ufon of heofone deah beacningende tacen = signa minantia mortem of Latin original.

B.—The Preterite Participle (2).

I. With Object (2).

NSM. (2):—290: blostmum behangen; 25²: mode gedrefed.

DREAM OF THE ROOD (Vercelli Text) (3).

A.—The Present Participle (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—24: Hwaðre ic sær liegende lange hwile behoeld brawwecarig hælendes treow.

B.—The Preterite Participle (2).

I. Without Object (1).

DSN. (1):—49: Eall ic wæs mid blode bestemed, begoten of sæs guman sidan.

II. With Object (1).

ASN. (1):—5: leohc bewunden.

DURHAM (1).

A.—The Preterite Participle (1).

I. With Object (1).

NPN. (1):—19: Eardiaþ . . . in sæm minstre unarimeda reliquia, monia wundrum gewurðad.
EADGAR (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. WITH OBJECT (2).

NSM. (1):—28 B: hama bereafod.
NSN. (1):—11 A: agangen wæs tynhund wintra geteled rimes.

EADWEARD (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—9: wel gesungen.

II. WITH OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—16: lande bereafod.

FALLEN ANGELS (DIE KLAGEN DER GEFALLENEN ENGEL) (12).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (12).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (3).

NSM. (1):—181: aworpen.
NPM. (1):—308: gefrætewod.
ASF. (1):—341: Godes andsacan hweorfan geond helle, hate onceled ufan and utan.

II. WITH OBJECT (9).

NSM. (5):—186: goda bedæled; 122: duguðum bedeled; 121: wuldre benemed; 38: gebunden fyrelommum; 131: synnum forwundod.
NPM. (3):—344: dreamum bedældæ; 52: susle begrörene; 343: wuldres beseyrede.
NPF. (1):—296: sorgum bedældæ.
Fates of Men (3).

A.—The Present Participle (1).

I. Without Object (1).

DSM. (1):—9: god ana wat, hwæt him weaxendum winter bringeð.

B.—The Preterite Participle (2).

I. With Object (2).

NSM. (2):—55: dreamum biseyred; 20: mode gebysegad.

Gloria (2).

A.—The Preterite Participle (2).

I. Without Object (2).

NSM. (2):—10: asyndrod; 12: geblet sod.

Gnomic Verses (1).

A.—The Preterite Participle (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—11. 35: to ðæs oft eymeð dead unsinged.

Harrowing of Hell (Höllenfahrt Christi) (2).

A.—The Present Participle (2).

I. Without Object (2).

NSM. (1):—24: hlyhende sprec.

NPM. (1):—91: mændon murnende.
HUSBAND'S MESSAGE (2).
A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).
I. Without Object (1).
NSF. (1):—13: sæt ē sinchroden sylf gemunde.

II. With Object (1).
NSM. (1):—39: nyde gebeded (ms. is defective).

HYMN (1).
A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).
I. With Object (1).
NSM. (1):—43: haliges gastes fegere gefelled.

INSCRIPTION ON CROSS AT BRUSSELS (2).
A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).
I. Without Object (1).
NSF. (1):—21: bær byfigende.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).
I. With Object (1).
NSF. (1):—22: blode bestemed.

JUDITH (9).
A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).
I. With Object (1).
NPM. (1):—272: Hi ða somod ealle ongunnon cohbetan, cirman hlude ð gristbitian gode orfeorme, mid toðon torn
öligende. [Cf. Guthlac 1029: tornölende; and Psalm 1115: torn toðumölion = dentibus fremere.]

B.—The Preterite Participle (8).

I. With Object (8).

NSM. (2):—67: wine swa druncen; 118: ðystrum forþylmed.
NSF. (2):—171: golde gefrætewod; 129: ðeawum ge-
ðungen.
ASF. (2):—36: beagum gehlæste; 37: hringum gehrodene.
ASN. (1):—329: golde gefrætewod.
APF. (1):—339: gerenode golde.
Note.—A. Müller considers ðearfendre in 85 (ie ðe... biddan wylle mitteð ðinre me ðearfendre) and geweorðod in 299 (Him on taste for sweet Þebra sigore geweorðod) apposi-
tive; they may be, but to me the former seems attributive
and the latter predicative.

Maldon (1).

A.—The Preterite Participle (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NPM. (1):—57: ðæt ge mid urum sceattum to scype
ganon unbefohtene (or pred.?).

Runesong (2).

A.—The Preterite Participle (2).

I. With Object (2).

NS. F. or M. (1):—31: flor forste geworuhd.
NSN. (1):—37: wyrtrumum underwreðyd.
SALOMO AND SATURNUS (6).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

I. Without Object (3).

NSM. (1):—105: Sonne he hangiende helle wisceð.
NPN. (1):—220: aterreynn, . . . ȝa ȝe nu weallende ȝurh attres oroð ingang ryman.
ASF. (1):—447: lisygende.

B.—THE PRESHETE PARTICIPLE (3).

I. Without Object (2).

NSF. (1):—31: gegoten.
NSN. (1):—222: gescweæd.

II. With Object (1).

ASM. (1):—104: holstre behelmed.

SEAFARER (4).

A.—THE PRESHETE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without an Object (1).

NSM. (1):—106: cymerð him se deade unceeded.

II. With an Object (3).

NSM. (3):—162: winemægum bidroren; 17: biælon hrimgicelum; 161: wynnum biloren.

SOUL AND BODY (4).

A.—THE PRESHETE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—46 (Verc.): ic wæs gast on ȝe fram gode sended (or pred.?).
II. With Object (3).

NSM. (2):—34 (Verc.): flessce befangen; 67 (Verc.): synnum gesargod.
NSN. (1):—105 (Verc.): dædum gedrefed.

SPIRIT OF MEN (4).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NPM. (1):—82: we sculon a hyegende hælo rædes gemu-nan in mode mæla gehwylem ðone ælestænan sigora waldend.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (3).

I. With Object (3).

NSM. (3):—42: ðrymme gebyrmed; 41: wine gewaged; 43: æfestum onaled.

SUMMONS TO PRAYER.

Note.—No example occurs in the Anglo-Saxon part of this poem, but two occur in the Latin, both with an object:—

2: ðæenne gemiltsað ðe . . . ðrymcyninge thrornum sedens;
25: to ðæodne thrornum regenti. With both compare Phoenix 623: ðrymsittendum.

WALDERE (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NSF. (1):—B 19: Standeð me her on eaxelum æElfheres laf god and geapueb, golde geweorðod (or pred.?).
WANDERER (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITH OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—20: eðle bidæled.

WHALE (5).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

NP, M. or N. (1):—32: bið . . . deofla wise, sæt hi droht-ende surh dyrne meaht duguðe beswicað.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—70: gereah (but the passage is doubtful).

II. WITH OBJECT (3).

NSM. (1):—45: heoloðhelme biðeah. 
NSN. (1):—10: sondbeorgum ymbseald. 
NPM. (1):—74: gyltum gehrodene.

WIDSID (2).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—39: ac Offa geslog círest monna cniht wesende cynerica mæst (cf. Beow. 46, 372, 535, 1187; Bede 142. 8, 188. 1).
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 265

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NSM. (1):—53: godes and yftes ðær ic cunnade cnosle bidæled.

WONDERS OF CREATION (3).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—80: witan . . . oððe hwa ðæs leohtes lond- buende brucan mote.

II. With Object (2).

NPM. (2):—14, 15: cuðon ryht sprecan, ðæt a friegende fira cynnes ð seyende searoruna gespon a gemyndge maest monna wiston.

Note.—Bewritten of line 19 should be bewritan or bewriðan, as several editors conjecture.
SYNOPTIC TABLE OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICLES IN ANGLO–SAXON.

I.—IN THE PROSE WORKS.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Work</th>
<th>Present Participle</th>
<th>Preterite Participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Total.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>N.</td>
<td>G.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bede, 1</td>
<td>107</td>
<td>93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boeth, 1</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greg, 1</td>
<td>58</td>
<td>56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oros, 1</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ps. Th, 1</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chrom.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Laws</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benedict, 1</td>
<td>63</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. Hym.</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ælfr. Hym.</td>
<td>477</td>
<td>203</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ælfr. L. of S.</td>
<td>355</td>
<td>129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ælfr. de V. et N. Test</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ælfr. Hept.</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A.-S. Hym. &amp; L. of S. i.</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A.-S. Hym. &amp; L. of S. ii.</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mat.</td>
<td>67</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>71</td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Luke</td>
<td>71</td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wulf.</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benet, 1</td>
<td>105</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totals in the Prose Works</td>
<td>1656</td>
<td>807</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.
## II.—In the Poems.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Without Object.</td>
<td>With Object.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Total. N. G. D. A.</td>
<td>Total. N. G. D. A.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beowulf</td>
<td>25 19 13 ... 2 4</td>
<td>4 4 ... ... ... ...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Genesis</td>
<td>10 10 6 1 2</td>
<td>4 4 ... ... ... ...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Exodus</td>
<td>3 3 3 ... ... ...</td>
<td>1 1 ... ... ... ...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Daniel</td>
<td>5 3 3 ... ... ...</td>
<td>2 2 ... ... ... ...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cynegyl's Christ</td>
<td>14 13 11 ... 1 1</td>
<td>1 1 ... ... ... ...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elen</td>
<td>9 7 5 ... 1 1</td>
<td>2 1 ... ... ... ...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Juliana</td>
<td>11 10 8 ... 1 1</td>
<td>1 1 ... ... ... ...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guinevere</td>
<td>11 10 9 1 ... ...</td>
<td>1 1 ... ... ... ...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riddles</td>
<td>8 8 7 1 ... ... ...</td>
<td>1 1 ... ... ... ...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andreas</td>
<td>4 7 3 1 ... ... ...</td>
<td>3 2 ... ... ... ...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phoenix</td>
<td>1 4 2 1 ... ... ...</td>
<td>1 1 ... ... ... ...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Metres of Bede</td>
<td>6 4 4 1 ... ... ...</td>
<td>3 1 ... ... ... ...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Metrical Psalms</td>
<td>17 13 7 ... 1 1</td>
<td>3 1 ... ... ... ...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Minor Poems</td>
<td>20 15 13 ... 1 1</td>
<td>1 5 ... ... ... ...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| Totals in Poetry    | 148 125 96 5 11 13 | 23 18 3 2 | 419 128 96 6 2 24 | 291 248 2 3 38 567 |
| Totals in Prose     | 1636 807 707 8 42 50 | 829 786 8 9 26 | 807 762 561 7 48 146 | 45 16 5 9 15 2443 |
| Grand Totals       | 1784 932 803 13 53 63 | 852 804 11 11 26 | 1226 890 657 13 50 170 | 336 264 7 12 33 3010 |
CHAPTER II.

USES OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

The uses of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon may be grouped under the three following larger heads:—

I. The Appositive Participle is equivalent to a Dependent Adjectival (Relative) Clause, and denotes either an action or a state, as in:—Mk. 3. 1: ἵππαρ ἦν ὁ ἀνήρ τῶν σφιρεινῶν huic hæbbende = erat ibi homo habens manum aridam; Bede1 246. 7: sende . . . haligene wer ḣ in his ḥeawum gemetfæstne ḣ in leornunge . . . wel geloredne = 194. 28: misit . . . usum sanctum, . . . scripturarum lectione sufficienter instructum; Beow. 624: ṣæt hi Beowulfæ, beahroden ecen, mode geðungen môdoful ætber; Aelf. L. S. 28. 58: On ḥam ylcan dæge com sum biseçop, helenus gehatæn.

II. The Appositive Participle is equivalent to a Dependent Adverbial (Conjunctive) Clause, and denotes time, manner, means, etc., as in:—Bede 8. 23b: ḥa brynas . . . gebiddende adwæscte = 37. 5: incendia orando restinxerit; ib. 10. 10: ḷæt se ylea biseçop geworden onhead = 48. 1: Ut idem episcopus factus mandarit; Beow. 480: Ful ofte gebeotedon beore drunæce ofer ealowieæ oretmeægas.

III. The Appositive Participle is substantially equivalent to an Independent Clause, and either (1) denotes an accompanying circumstance or (2) repeats the idea of the principal verb. Doubtless, as Gildersleeve holds (Latin Grammar, § 664, Remark 1), an ultimate analysis would show every participle to be dependent in nature; but the dependence here is so slight that it may be ignored. Certainly the function of the participles under this head is so radically
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 269

different from that of those under I. and II. as to demand separate consideration. Nor does the fact that in modern English we not infrequently retain the participle in our translation of (2) (cf. Mat. 13. 3) invalidate this classification. To define the class negatively: all appositive participles that are not equal to either a dependent adjectival or a dependent adverbial clause are considered as equal to an independent clause. This use of the participle is commonly recognized by Greek and Latin grammarians. Thus, in the remark just cited, Gildersleeve admits this use of the participle, although he objects to its being classed as co-ordinate: “It is sometimes convenient to translate a Participle Sentence by a co-ordinate clause, but the Participle itself is never co-ordinate, and such clauses are never equivalents.” Goodwin also recognizes this use; in § 832–§ 844 of his Moods and Tenses he designates the relations expressed by his “Circumstantial Participle” as follows: (1) time, (2) means, (3) manner, (4) cause, (5) purpose, (6) condition, (7) concession, (8) “any attendant circumstance, the participle being merely descriptive;” (9) “that in which the action consists.” His (8) and (9) cover exactly the ground of my “participle substantially equivalent to an independent clause;” and it seems to me that to give this use the name Co-ordinate is in the interest of simplicity. This modification made, Goodwin’s “Circumstantial Participle” would tally perfectly with my “Participle equivalent to a dependent adverbial clause.” Fay (l. c.) and Milroy (p. 16) explicitly state that the participle is occasionally equivalent to a co-ordinated finite verb. If I dwell on this co-ordinate use of the participle, it is because it has received but scant treatment in our standard English and German grammars (see March, § 459 (4), Mätzner, m., p. 70 (c), and von Jagemann, § 124, c), and is not mentioned in any of the dissertations on Anglo-Saxon or Germanic syntax that have come under my notice. Examples are as follows:—(1):—

_Lk. 4. 39:_ he _standende_ ofer _hig_ _đam_ _fefore_ _bebead_ = _stans_ super _illum_ imperavit _febrī_; _ib. 10. 23:_ _pa_ _cwæþ_ he to _his_
learningenihtum bewend = Et conversus ad discipulos suos dixit;—Aelf. L. S. 146. 458: behyddon his . . . lichaman . . . sceg ende; Mat. 8. 25: hy awhelton hyne Sus eve ende = suscitaverunt eum dicentes;—(2):—Mat. 11. 25: Se hælynd ewep andswariende = respondens Jesus dixit; ib. 13. 3: he sprec to hym fela on bigpellum, eve ende = Et locutus est eis multa in parabolis, diceus; Aelf. L. S. 80. 523: sprec mid . . . reorde god herigende.

The relative frequency of these three uses of the appositive participle—the adjectival, the adverbial, and the co-ordinate—may be gathered from these figures: of the adjectival there are about 1223 instances in all, 881 in the prose and 342 in the poetry; of the adverbial, about 897 instances, 691 in the prose and 206 in the poetry; of the co-ordinate, about 890 instances, 871 in the prose and 19 in the poetry. In all about 3010 examples of the appositive participle have been collected, of which 1784 are present and 1226 are preterite.

So much by way of general statement; let us now consider the three classes in detail.

I. THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IS EQUIVALENT TO A DEPENDENT ADJECTIVAL (RELATIVE) CLAUSE.

As we have seen, the adjectival is the commonest use of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon, about 1223 examples occurring in all. Of this number 881 occur in the prose, and 342 in the poetry, in each distributed throughout all periods.

The adjectival use is found with both the present and the preterite participles, but is far more frequent with the latter than with the former. About 377 examples occur of the present participle, and about 846 of the preterite. Examples of each participle are given below.

The present participle, in this use, has the power of governing a direct object, but it occurs far more frequently
without an object than with one, especially in Early West Saxon and in the poetry, in the latter of which an object is almost unknown. In all we have 270 present participles without an object and 107 with an object. [See the discussion of the Governing Power of the Participle, in Chapter III.]

The past participle, too, can have an object (see Explanatory Note to Statistics), and in the poetry usually does; in prose the reverse is the case. Of the preterite participles used adjectivally, 609 have no object, of which 525 are found in the prose and 84 in the poetry; while 237 do have an object, of which 39 are from the prose and 198 from the poetry.

As stated in my Introduction, not a few scholars deny the adjectival use to the appositive participle, and class all participles that are equivalent to a relative clause as attributive. I have, however, already explained why I do not accept this view, and have shown that the meaning of the term appositive participle has been extended to include participles equal to relative clauses. Still other scholars admit that the participle equivalent to a relative clause may be used appositively, but only, they maintain, when the participle denotes an act (in the largest sense); that which denotes a state or condition being called attributive. It appears to me that, in so doing, these grammarians are confounding two distinct things, viz., the classification of the participle by its nature and the classification by its syntactical relationship,—a confusion that should be avoided. But I have not ignored the object at which these scholars aim, namely, sharply to discriminate between the participle that has strong verbal (assertive) power and the participle that has strong adjectival (descriptive) power; on the contrary, by arranging the whole of my statistics with reference to whether or not the participle is followed by an object, and by emphasizing the co-ordinate use of the participle, I have tried to segregate the more verbal from the less verbal participles to a degree not
attempted hitherto in Anglo-Saxon. To apply this principle to the matter in hand, the participle that is equivalent to an adjectival (relative) clause: the transitive participle with an object is manifestly nearer a verb than the participle without an object. Again, the preterite participle is more like an adjective than is the corresponding present participle. This will sufficiently explain the chief differences between my statistics and those of former investigators as to the adjectival use of the appositive participle.

The adjectival use occurs in most of the texts, prose and poetical, and I give a few examples here from the chief writers in prose and in poetry.

I. In Prose.

Ælfred:—Bede 8. 2: Þæt P . . . wæs siended to gely-fendum Scottum on Crist = 28. 15: Ut . . . P. ad Scottos in Christum credentes missus est.—Ib. 78. 15: Þæt wiif in blodes flownesse geseted . . . meahte gehrinan = 55. 25: Si ergo in fluxu . . . posita . . . potuit tangere.—Boeth. 46. 27:

Hwæt is heora nu to lafe, butan se lytla hlisa Þ se nama mid feamn stafum awritten? = 47. 17: Signat superstes fana tenuis pauculis Inane nomen litteris.—Greg. 1 155. 10: Þonne he ongiet be sumum ðingum oðde ðeawum utanne atieedum eall Þæt hie innan ðeneað = 112: qui discussis quibusdam signis exterioris apparentibus ita eorda . . . penetrat etc.

Ps. Th.:—20. 3: ðu sendest his heafod kyngold, mid deorwyrðum gimmum astewed = posuisti in capite ejus coronam de lapide pretioso.

Chron.:—755 F.: Sibertes broðer, Cynehard gehaten, ofsloh Cynewulf on Merantune.

Laws:—Ælfred, c. 9, Title: Be bearneacenum wife ofslægene-num [MS. B.: Be ðam ðæt man ofsleæa wif mid cilde].

Bened. 1:—25. 16: and nu fram ðam englum us betachtum are weorc . . . beoð gebodude = 50. 13: et ab angelis nobis deputatis . . . opera nostra nuntiantur.
THE APPPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO–SAXON. 273

Bl. Hom. 11. 7: Arweorðian we Crist on binne asetene.
Ælfric:—L. 8. 54. 83: gewendon to . . . byrig, Antiochia geciged (sic!).—Ib. 78. 494¹:\²: Effrem wæs gehaten sum swide halig abbod on westene wunigende, fela wundre wyrrende.

Gosp.:—Mat. 8. 9: Soðlice ic eom man under anwealde gesett = Nam et ego homo sum sub potestate constitutus.—Ib. 8. 17: Ææt ware gefylled Ææt geccwedan is ðurh esiam ðone witegan, ðus evecende (sic!).—Ib. 11. 16: heo ys gelic sittendum cnapun on foretige = Similis est pueris sedentibus in foro.

Wulfst.:—46. 7: wa eow, . . . ðe legað togaðere hamas and eletha on unriht begytene on æghwilce healf. —181. 29: ealle gemænelice, gehadode and læwede, bugon to gode georne.

II. In Poetry.

Beow.:—777: sær fram sylle abeg medubenc monig mine gefræge, golde geregnad.—Ib. 1645: ða com in gan ealdor ṣegna, daedeene mon dome gehwarad.

El.:—331: sær on ðrymme bad . . . geatolic guðewen golde gehyrsted (or pred.?).—Ib. 352: Swa hit eft be eow Essaias witga for weordum wordum mælde, deophyggyende ðurh dryhtnes gast.

Gen.:—725: hlæw ᵁa þ plegode boda bitre gehugod.—Ib. 1836: hwæt sie freondlufu ellæodigra uncer twega, feorren eumenvra.

II. THE APPPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IS EQUIVALENT TO A DEPENDENT ADVERBIAL (CONJUNCTIVE) CLAUSE.

Of the adverbial use of the appositive participle I have found about 897 examples, 691 in the prose and 206 in the poetry.
The present participle occurs 533 times in this use, and the past participle 359 times.
Of the present participles 430 have no object and 108 have; of the preterite participles 261 have no object, while 98 have. In its adverbial use the appositive participle denotes subordinate relations of manner and means (combined here under the head of Modal), of time, of cause, of purpose, of concession, and of condition. Of course, these uses so interlap that at times the same participle can with propriety be put under several different heads. Where classification is so largely a matter of subjectivity, there must be much room for difference of opinion. I trust, however, that in the main my classification will justify itself to my readers. According to my estimate, the approximate number of each use is: Modal, 319; Temporal, 248; Causal, 228; Final, 40; Concessive, 33; Conditional, 29. Let us look at each for a moment by itself.

1. MODAL.

The Modal use of the appositive participle is far more frequent in Anglo-Saxon prose than in the poetry, 257 examples occurring in the former and 62 in the latter. Of these 319 examples 254 are present and 65 are past. An object is rarely used with the modal participle, only 16 occurring with the present participle and 22 with the preterite.

Though occurring in all periods of Anglo-Saxon, the modal participle is much more common in the works of Alfred than in those of any other author. In his Bede and his Gregory the construction is especially frequent, about one-third of all the examples being found in these two works. Here, as my statistics show, the Anglo-Saxon participle often translates a Latin gerund in the ablative; and the frequency of the gerund in the two originals has doubtless caused the large number of modal participles in the two translations.

As stated above, the modal participle denotes both manner and means. It is not always easy to tell which notion
The appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon. 275

predominates, but the examples below will, it is hoped, sufficiently illustrate the two tendencies.

Some participles denoting manner, instead of being equivalent to a dependent adverbial clause, are practically equivalent to a simple adverb, as in: *Bede* 1 86. 22<sup>a</sup><sup>b</sup>: *sæt he weccende* *ðohte ðæt he [nu] wectende ærefne* = 60. 28: *quia, quod cogitauit sciens*, *hoc pertulit nesciens*; ib. 38. 1: *Ða ðæt hæl þæni . . . geðyldelice * *gæfeonde* *æfer* = 20. 1: *Qui . . . patienter hæc pro Domino, immo gaudenter ferebat*; ib. 310. 30: *Þas we seondon afæstlice fylgende* *rìhtwuldriende* = 239. 23: *Hos itaque sequentes nos pie atque orthodoze*; *Ælf. Hom. 1. 52<sup>b</sup>: *he for ðæm stænendum weallende gebæd*; *Mat. 5. 11*: *seegæ ðæc yfel ongen cwe leogende* *for me* = dixerint omne malum adversum vos *mentientes* propeter me; *etc.*, *etc.* Personally I believe it would be better to class such words as participial adverbs rather than adverbial participles; but, as I hesitate to set up new categories, in my statistics I have retained them under the ordinary rubric, save in one or two cases that could not be construed as participles, like *gæfeonde* (*Greg.* 1 159. 18, *etc.*: *see Statistics*). This use of the participle as an adverb, it is well known, is common in Greek (see Goodwin, *Greek Grammar*, §1564) and in Latin (see Gildersleeve, *Latin Grammar*, §325. 6). In Old High German it was so very frequent that there was developed a regular adverbial form of the participle in -o (O. Erdmann, *Syntax der Spräche Otfrids*, §359; *see below, Chapter v.*). I have not, however, found this use of the participle treated in Koch, Mätzner, March, or in the dissertations on Old English syntax. There is perhaps a suggestion of it in Cosijn (ii., p. 97), who writes of *Greg.* 1 159. 18: "adverbialisch *vreagende*?" Further illustrations are given under "(2) Manner" below.

(1) Means.

I. In Prose.

*Ælfred:*— *Bede* 1 22. 9: *þæt se b. ænne dumble moom gebuddende gehælde* = 282. 30: *Ut episcopus mutum benedi-
cendo curauerit. So gebiddende = orando in Bede\(^1\) 22. 11, 22. 14, etc.—Ib. 72. 3\(^a\&b\) : sætte oft [seo cirice] sæt widerworde yfel aboerende try adelend bewere\(^d\) = 51. 29: ut sepe malum quod adversatur portando et dissipulando compescat.—Greg.\(^1\) 53. 16: Sua si miela craetiga hiertende tosyt\(\delta\) & egesiende stier\(\delta\) ofermetta mid sære talinge his hieremonnum, sæt he hie gebringe on life = 30\(^a\): Magnus enim regendi artifex favoribus impellit, terroribus retrahit: ut etc.—Ib. 81. 10, 11: sæt is sæt he spreccende bebeit sæt he sæt wyrecende ðēwe, sæt hit ðurh ðone sultum sie fotðenge = 54\(^a\): quia quod loquendo imperat, ostendendo adjuvat ut fiat.—Ib. 127. 6, 7: sæt mod his hieremonna olieccende egesige & ðreatigende oliece = 88\(^b\) : terrendo demulecat, et tamen ad terroris reverentiam demeanendo constringat.—Ib. 225. 22: ða monn\(\&\)wieresse ðe he ær ðurhtogen hæide eft ðæaltunge on yfel gewend [Cotton ms.: gewent] = 170\(^b\) : et mansuetudinem, quam tolerantes habuerunt, retractantes in malitiam vertunt.

Bened.\(^1\):—2. 10: nellen ge elciende eowere heortan ahyrdan = 4. 15: nolite obdurare corda vestra.

Bl. Hom.:—89. 34\(^a\&b\) : raðe he lifgeude ut eode of his byrgenne mid his ageure mihte æwicht.

Ælfric:—Hom. 1. 226\(^b\) : Mare miht wæs, sæt he ðone deað mid his æriste tobrec, ðonne he his lif gehoolde, of sære rode astigende.—Ib., II. 182\(^a\&b\) : ðone ðe B. na handlunge ac on-beseonale fram his bendum alysdale.

Gosp.:—Lk. 12. 25: Hwylc eower maeg ðæneende ican ðe elne to his anlicnesse? = Quis autem vestrum cogitando potest adjicere ad staturnum suam cubitum unum?—Mk. 15. 30: gelæl ðe sylfne of sære rode stigende = Salvum fac temetipsum descendens de cruce.

II. In Poetry.

El.:—449: Ñe mæg æfre ofer ðæt Ebrea ðeod reððæalhtende rice headan. [May be adjectival, as Schürmann and Garnett hold.]
(2) Manner.

I. In Prose.

Ælfric:—Bede 72. 9: ða ðe him ne ondraedæ xerontonde syngian = 52. 1: qui non metuunt sciendo peccare.—Ib. 102. 21: is sægd ðæt he beotigunde förcæwæde = 83. 27: fertur mitinans prædixisse.—Boeth. 3. 7: Hu B. hine singende gebræd, ḣ his earþðu to Gode mænde.—Ib. 9. 29: Ongan ða giddian, ḣ ðus singende cwæð.—Ib. 8. 15: ðæ ic ða ðis leɔð, cwæð B., germanende asungen hæfde, ða com etc. = 4. 2: Hæc dum mecum tacitus ipse reputarem querrimoniamque lacrimabilem stili officio signarem, adstitisse . . . uisa est mulier etc.—Greg. 185. 9: æres-ð mon scealt sprecan ascende, suelce he be oðrum menn sprece & ascie = 138*: prius per quasdam simulitudines velut de alieno negotio requirendi sunt.—Ib. 405. 31: hi offermodgiende his gebod forhogdon = superbiens ejus iussa contemptis.—Ib. 379. 23: Hie sceoldon gehieran hu Essaas se witga hverosigende hine selne wælde = 294*: Audiant quod Isaia magnæ voce perniciæ se ipse reprehendit.—Ib. 381. 25: cwæð ðæt ða scealden bion synderlice Godes ðegnas, ða ðe unwændiende ðara scyldegena gyltas ofslægen = 296*: illos a parte Dei de-nuntiavit existere, qui delinquentium scelera incendantur ferirent diecis (or adverb ?)—Ib. 117. 23: Forðam we becð mid Gode sua miele suiðor gebundne sua we for munnum orsorclicor ungewihtode syngiap = 82*: Tanto ergo apud Dominum obligationes sumus, quanto apud homines inutile peccamus.

Ælfric:—Hom. 1. 54*: ðæt ðu scealt miltisigende forgifan.—Ib. 1. 340*: he hit þer on his exulum to ðære eowde blissigende.

Gosp.:—Mat. 6. 5: ða lufiað ðæt hig gebidden hi standende on gesonungum = qui amant in synagogis . . . stantes orare.—Mk. 5. 40: inn-codon suirunde ðar ðæt mændæ wæs = ingreditur ubi prælla erat jacens.—Ib. 9. 24: wepende cwæð = cum lacrymis aiebat.—Lk. 22. 65: manega ðære ðing hig him to cwædon dysigende = alia multa blasphemantes dicebant in eum.
II. In Poetry.

*Beow.* 2062: him se ðan dona ðoigende, con him land geare. [If we adopt Heyne's *lifigende*, the participle is Final instead of Modal. See below under Final]. — *Ib.* 2235: swa hy on geardagum gumena nathwyle eormenlæfe æðelan cynnes *Sanchycygende* ðær gehydde.— *Ib.* 2595: niwan stefne nearo ðrowode fyre befongen, se ðe ær folce weold. [May be Adjectival, but is more probably Modal, as K. Köhler puts it.]

*Andr.* 1557: hean, hygegeomor, hefende spræc. [May be Adjectival.]

*Gen.* 1582: ac he hlihende broðrum sægde.

II. TEMPORAL.

The second most frequent use of the adverbial appositive participle is to denote relations of time. If we use the term *temporal* in a very broad sense, no doubt a number of participles that I have put under other rubrics might be put here, since almost any participle may be looked upon as indicating after a fashion a time relationship. But I have classed as temporal only those participles in which the idea of time seems definite rather than general. Of the 248 temporal participles in Anglo-Saxon, 200 are found in the prose, and 48 in the poetry.

Of these participles 166 are in the present tense, and 82 in the preterite.

As with the modal participle, so here an object is rare; 28 occurring with the present participle and 10 with the preterite.

As my table shows, the temporal participle is sprinkled throughout the periods of Anglo-Saxon.

Examples follow:—

I. In Prose.

Ælfred:—*Bede* 1 214. 11: swa eft onlysed ðy lichamon byrneð = 166. 4: ita solutus corpore ardebit.— *Ib.* 264. 25:
song Æa *ingongende* ealle gefylde = 208. 25: quod *ingressa* [= uox] totum impleuit.—Ib. 142. 8: sægde he Ææt he hine [i.e., here, here] eneolt *wesende* gesawe (MS. Ca: hine ene æniht wesende) = 116. 12: se in pucritia uidisse testabatur.—Greg.¹ 93. 9: Hit is geecuden Ææt se sacerd seolde sweltan, gif se sweg nære of him gehiered ægðer ge *ingongendum* ge utgongendum, etc. = 62b: Sacerdos nuncque ingrediens vel egressi moritur, si de eo sonitus non audiatur.—Ib. 399. 14: Sio Segor gehælde Loth *fleondæ* = 318a: Segor civitas, quæ *fugientem* salvet infirmum.

Ælfric:—Horn. I. 232: Crist ableow Æone Halgan Gast ofer Æa apostolas, Æ-gyt *weoragende* on corræn.—Ib. II. 250²: Se H. Æa stod on Æam domerne geælæd.

Gosp.:—Mat. 7. 6: hig Æone ongean *geæwende* eow toslyton *conversi* dirumpunt vos.—Mk. 15. 15: sealde him Æone hælend *besæwengne* = tradidit Jesum flagellis æsum (or Adjectival?).

II. In Poetry.

Beow.:—535: Wit Ææt *geæwæden* eniht-*wesende*.—Ib. 815: wæs gehwæðer oðrum *lifigende* lað.

El.:—529: Ðus mec ðæter min on fyrdagum unweax-*enne* wordum lærde.

Gen.:—2169: æc iæ *lifigende* her wið weana gehwam wreo ð sceylde.

III. CAUSAL.

Of the 228 Causal Participles, 157 belong to the prose and 71 to the poetry.

The present participle is found 56 times, the preterite 172 times.

An object occurs with the present participle in 23 instances, and with the preterite in 51 instances.

The causal use is pretty evenly distributed throughout the various prose and poetical texts.

Not a few of the examples are doubtful.
I. In Prose.


Ælfric:—Hom. r. 380b²: he feallende toberst on feower stōcca.—Ib. r. 594b¹: ðæs grebylygd het hine ahon.

Gos.:—Mk. 3. 5²: ofer hyra heortan blindnesse gewæt ðæs = contristatus super cæcitate . . . dicit.—Mat. 14. 8: ða ðæs heo fram hyre meder gemyngod = At illa præmonita a matre sua . . . inquit (or Temporal?).—Ib. 15. 31: swa ðæt ða mænegu wundredon geseonde dumbe sprecende etc. = Ìta ut turbæ mirarentur videntes mutos loquentes.—Lk. 4. 28: ða wurdon hig ealle on ðære gesammunge mid yrre gefylled, ðas ðing gehyrenda = Et repleti sunt omnes in synagoga ira, hèc audientes.

II. In Poetry.

Andr. 436: wæteregesa sceal gedyl ð geðreatod ðurh ðryð-cinning, laŋu lacende lidra wyrdan.—Ib. 746: ðæs sel nyton mode gemyrde.

El. 1128: he ðan meglan onfeng egesan geaclod ð ðære arwyrdan ewene brohte.

Gen. 1571: Swiðe on shape sefa nearwode, ðæt he ne mihte on gemynd drepen hive handum self mid hrægle wryon ð sceome ðeccan.

IV. FINAL.

The appositive participle denoting purpose is rare, only 40 examples having been found; 39 in the prose, and 1 in the poetry (doubtful).

This use is confined almost exclusively to the present participle; but one example occurs in the preterite (Ælfr. Hom. r. 134b), and that is doubtful.
The final participle has an object oftener than not; of the 39 present participles 35 have an object. The single example of the preterite participle has no object.

A glance at the table will show that only three examples have been found in Early West Saxon: two in Bede, each answering to a Latin participle; and one in Gregory, corresponding to a Latin infinitive of purpose. Most of the examples occur in Ælfric's *Homilies* and in the *Gospels*.

Among the examples may be cited:

I. In Prose.

*Ælfric.*—*Bede*¹ 10. 7: bodode; ï swa mid his lef-nysse Godes word bodigende on Cent eode = 44. 25: sic Cantiam prædicatus intrauerit (or Pred. ?).—*Ib.* 276. 12: licode us efecumam æfter ðæawe arwyrðra rehta sneagende be ðam etc. = 215. 1: placuit conuenire nos, tractatus de etc.—*Greg.*¹ 61. 3: Se læce ... ðæ gæð æfter ðæra monna husum hæwningende = 36*: percessum mederi properat.

*Bened.*¹ 135. 27: sume heora fnada and wæðas gemisceldæ, idel lof fram mannum bregytende = 232. 2: ali limbræs et phylactériæ sua magnificat, gloriam captantes ab hominibus. —*Ib.* 134. 13: ðæor cyn is muneca, ðæ feor fram mannum gewitad ond westestowa and æfetn and anmænning gelufið, geefunctæcende Eliæn = 231. 6: Secundum genis est eremitarum qui, procul ab hominibus recedentes, deserta loca et vastas solitudines sequi, atque habitare perhibenter, ad imitacionem scilicet Eliæ.

*Ælfri.*—*Hom.* 1. 74*: Hi ða begen ðone apostol gesohton, his miltsunge biddende.—*Ib.* 1. 134*: gebrohte ðæt cild ðæ heo acende, H. C., gelæcd to ðam Godes temple (or adjectival ?).—*Ib.* 1. 338*: “Sonne forlæt he ða nigon and hund-nigontig on westene and gæð secende ðæt an ðæ him losode” [or Pred. ? Cf. *Mat.* 18. 12: gæð and secð = vadit quaere].

*Gosp.*—*Mat.* 19. 3: ða genealahton him to farisæi hyne costuigende ï cwældon = Et accesserunt ad eum Pharisaei ten-
tantes eum, et dicentes.—Lk. 2. 45: hig gewendon to hierusalem hyne secende = regressi sunt in Jerusalem requirentes eum.—J. 6. 6: ßæt he ßæð his fundigende = Hoc autem dicebat tentans eum. So J. 8. 6: fundiende.

II. In Poetry.

Beow. 2062: if we read lifigende; but we have the modal use if we read wigende (see above, under Modal).

Dan. 355: wearð se hata lig todriðen Þ todwæced, ßær ßæ daellhwaton geond Þone ofen eodon Þ se engel mid, feorh nerigende, se ße ßær scordâ was, Annanias Þ Azarias Þ Miscel (or pred.?).

V. CONCESSIVE.

The concessive use of the appositive participle is somewhat rarer even than the final. 33 examples occur in all, 25 in the prose, and 8 in the poetry.

Of these 19 are in the present, and 14 in the past tense.

An object is very rare, only 4 occurring with each of the two participles.

As to its distribution, but three examples have been found in Early West Saxon, namely, one each in Bede, Gregory, and Orosius, the two first corresponding to Latin participles, and all being doubtful. Most of the instances are in the Gospels. One example occurs in each of these poems: Beowulf, Elene, Genesis, Guthlac, Juliana, and Metres of Boethius, and two in the Phoenix.

The following will serve as examples:—

I. In Prose.

ÆÆfred:—Bede† 278. 16b: Gif he ßæne sipæ onfongen, haten ham hweorfan, ne wille, etc. = 216. 16b: Quod si semel susceptus noluerit invitus redire, etc. [May be temporal, as Miller translates.]—Greg. 153. 1: Ac monige scylda open-
lice vitene beo$ to forberan$ne = 110b: Nonnulla autem vel aperte cognita, mature toleranda sunt, etc. [May be adjectival.]—Oros. 250. 14: Æfter ðæm Germanic gesohton Agustus ungeniedde him to friðe. [May be modal.]

Ælfric:—Hom. i. 596b$: forðan ðe he ne geswicð so$ to bodigene, nu twegen dagas encu hangigende.

Gosp.:—Mat. 13. 13a,b$: forðam ic spece to him mid bigspellum, forðam ðe lociende hig ne geseoð ð gehyrende hig ne gehyra$ = quia violentes non videat, et audientes non au$diunt. So: Mk. 4. 12a,b; Lk. 8. 10a,b.—Lk. 5. 5b$: Eala bebeodon ealle niht swincende we naht ne gefengon = Præceptor, per totam no$tem laborantes, nihil cepimus.—Ib. 6. 35: læne sylla$ nan ðing ðanum eft gehihtende = date, nihil inde sperantes.

II. In Poetry.

Beow. 2350: for ðon he ær føla nædæne ni$a gedigde. [K. Köhler classes as modal, but Garnett translates as concessive.]

Gen. 2649: Me sægde ær sæt wif hire wordum selfa unfri$egendum, sæt etc.

Guth. 1260: Bad se ðe secelde cadig on elne endedogor awre$een wælstrælund. [Furkert: Pred. after intransitive verb, but Gollancz translates as appositive and concessive.]

Jul. 241: Symle heo wuldoreyning herede æt heor$tan hefonrices god in ðam nydelafan, nergend ñira, heolstre bihelmad.

Phoenix: 162: Ðonne wæðum strong west gewite$ ðwin$rum gebys$gad fleogan feðrum snel —Ib. 368: For$don he drus$ende de$ð ne bisorg$ð.

Metres of Boeth. 11. 34: Swa hæf$ geheæ$erod hefonrices weard mid his anwælde ealle gescealta, sæt hiora ægh$wile wið ðær wintæ, ð ðæah winess$e wres$dia$ feste = 48. 3: Quod pugnantia semina fo$edus perpetu$um tenent.
VI. CONDITIONAL.

Least frequent of all the adverbial uses of the appositive participle is the conditional. Of the 29 examples 13 are in the prose and 16 in the poetry.

The present participle is used 4 times, the preterite 25.

Twice the present participle has an object, and 11 times the preterite participle.

In Early West Saxon, I have found only 4 examples (1 in Bede and 3 in Boethius). Late West Saxon, also, has very few examples, there being one doubtful example in Ælfric and two in the Gospels. In the poetry are represented Beowulf (2), Genesis (3), Exodus (2), Eadgar (1), Andreas (3), Elene (2), Riddles (2), and Metrical Psalms (1).

As my quotations show, several of these examples are quite doubtful.

Typical examples are:

I. In Prose.

Ælfric:—Bede 278. 18*: Gif he æne síða onfongen haten ham hwæorfan [ne wille] = 216. 16*: Quod si semel susceptus noluerit inuitatus redire etc.—Boeth. 30. 25, 26: Ac gis hi yfele sint ð lytige ðonne sint hi ðe pliolicer ð geswinefulran hæfdir ðonne nafdir; forðæm yfele ðegnas biod simle heora hlafordes fiend = 37. 47 f.: Quí si utíosi moribus sint, pérniciosa dominus sarcina et ipsi domino nehementer inimica.—Ib. 91. 8: Ne mæg ic nane cweuce wuht ongitan ðara ðe wite hwæt hit wille, ððse hwæt hit nylle, ðe ungened lyste forweordan = 78. 45: nihil imenio, quod nullis extra cogentibus abiciant manendi intentionem et ad iteritum sponte festinent.

Bened. 28. 2: geneadod to anre mile gange, gang willes twa = 54. 7: angariati milliario vadunt duo.—Ib. 28. 6.

Gosp.:—Mk. 7. 15: Nis nan ting of ðam men gangende ðet hine besmitan mæge = Nihil est extra hominem introiens in eum quod possit eum coinquinore. [May be adjectival or
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 285
temporal.]—Ib. 7. 18: Ne ongyte ge sæt eall sæt utan cymð on ðone man gangende ne mæg hine besmitan? = Non intelligitis quia omne extrinsecus introiens etc. [May be temporal.]

II. In Poetry.

Beav. 1368, 1370: Ñæh ðe hæðstapa ðundum geswenceld, heorot hornum trum holtwudu sece, feorran geflymed, ðær he sceórh seleð.

Gen. 1263: Siððan ðundtwelfig geteled rime wintra on worulde wræce bisgedon sege ðeoda. So geteled rime(s): Gen. 1336, 2344; Exod. 372; Andr. 1035; Eadgar 11; El. 2 and 634; Metr. Ps. 67. 17.

Exod. 232: Wæs on anra gehwam æðelan cynnes alesen under lindum leoda duguðe on folgetæl ðiftig cista; hæfde cista gehwilc cuðes werodes garberendra, guðfremmendra x-hund geteled tireadigra.

Andr. 883: Swylce we gesegon for suna meotudes æðelum eone eowic standan, twelfe geteled, tireadige hæleð.

Riddles 24. 15, 16: Nelle ic unbunden ægnum hyran nymðe searoscel. Saga, hwæt ic hatte! [24. 15 may be temporal.]

III. The Appositive Participle is Substantially Equivalent to an Independent Clause.

Of the 890 co-ordinate participles 871 are found in the prose, and 19 in the poetry.

The present participle occurs 869 times, and the preterite 21 times.

An object is found far more frequently with the co-ordinate than with the adjectival or the adverbial participle, there being 633 instances with the present, and 2 with the past participle.

The co-ordinate participle is very rare in Early West Saxon and in the poetry; and whenever it occurs in the works of 10
MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.

Ælfred, it is in translation of a Latin appositive participle. It is very common in Benedict, in the works of Ælfric, in the Gospels, and in Benet.

I add a few examples to those already given in defining the co-ordinate use of the appositive participle. They are arranged under two heads: (1) the participle denotes an accompanying circumstance; (2) the participle repeats the idea of the principal verb. The former may conveniently be designated as the "circumstantial" participle in the narrower sense; the latter, as the "iterating" participle.

(1) The "Circumstantial" Participle.

I. In Prose.

Ælfred:—Bede 312. 23 a b: we wuldriað usserne Drihten swa swa ðas wuldredon, noht tuaecastende oððe onweg aeteonde = 240. 18 a b: glorificamus Dominum sicut... nihil addentes uel subtrahentes.—Ib. 312. 25, 27: ða ðe heo onfengon we eac swelce onfoð, wuldriende God Fæder ð his Sunu = 240. 20, 21, 22:... suscipimus, glorificantes Deum et filium eius.—Ib. 332. 16: Forðon ðe in ðem ilcan mynstre... Hereswið... regollicum ðeode scopum under ðeoden, in ða tid baad ðone eac sige = 253. 10: Nam H... ,... , regularibus subdita disciplinis; expectabat (doubtful).—Other examples:—Bede 10. 12: hiddende = petens; 14. 4: hiddende = postulans; 310. 1: feohtende = commagnantes; 438. 30: sittende = residens.—Oros. 132. 12, 32, 33: ðonne forð donan west irnende heo tolíð on twa ymb an igland ðe mon hæt Meræn, ð donan bugende ut on ðone Wendelsæ... ðæt se ða bið flowende ofer eal Ægypta lond = 13. 20, 22: Ægyptus inferior... habet... fluviunique Nilum, qui etc. deinde dün ad occasum profluent, faciensque insulam nomine Merœn in media sui: noviss-ime ad septentroniem inflexus plana Ægypti rigat.

Chron. 656 E (p. 33'): seó papa seonde ða his writ ðus cwæðend (or adjectival ?). So 675 E (p. 35').
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 287

Bened. 30. 3: swigean healdne de spreccod sy = 56. 19: taciturnitatem habens usque ad interrogationem non loquantur.

Ælfric:—Hom. 1. 48: And gebigde his ecnewu, mid micelre stemne cyypigende etc.—Ib. 1. 62: Johannes besah to heofonum, ßus eæðende.


Benet 31. 16: mid ealre gehyrsumenessa hine sylfe ßeowde ëaldre georfenæcende drihtnes = omni obedientia se subdat majori, immittans dominum.

II. In Poetry.

Beow. 916: Hwilum fìtende fealwe strete mearum ëæton.

Christ 950: Ond on seofoon healfa swogað windas, blawað brecende bearhtma ëæste—Ib. 1016: Fordon nis ænig wundor hu him woredmonna seo ækleæce gecynd eearum sorægende hearde ondrede ßonne etc. (or adjectival?)


Met. Ps. 50. 1. 56 (Cot.): Ac ßu synuffle simle lærdes, ßet hio ceærende Criste herdon ßa hiom lif mid ße langsum begeton.

(2) The "Iterating" Participle.

I. In Prose.

Ælfric:—Bede 330. 30: heo of eorðan alæded leorde ßy fifteenæ daæg etc. = 252. 20: de terris ablata transuiuit.—Ib. 210. 26: wool . . . feor ßa wide grimsigende micle menigeo monna afylde ßa fornorn = 192. 4: longe lateque desæwien . . . strauti.—Ib. 312. 2: æfter heora lare . . . geðæærelice
we gelyfað ondettende 239. 24: iuxta doctrinam eorum pro-
jessi credimus consonanter, et confitemur.——Oros. 1 240. 9:
wepende mænde ða unare.

Chroon. 1083 E b: gyrne cleopedon to Gode his miltse
biddende (or final?).

Bened. 1 4. 10: Be ðæm ilican andgyte se hælend eowð on
ðæm halgan godspelle ðus clypended eð. 16: Unde et Domi-
nus in Evangelio ait.—Ib. 11. 8: hy ðæah forhogende me
forsawon e&. 21: ipsi autem contemnentes spreverunt me
(or modal?).

Ælfric.—Hom. 1. 104 b: ðæs Fæder stemm of heofenum
hlude swege, ðus cweþende.—Ib. 1. 294 b: him to spœc
ymbe Godes rice, samod mid him reordigende.

Gosp.—Mal. 8. 31: ða deoﬂa sóþlice hyne bædon, ðus
cweþende = Dæmones autem rogabant eum dicentes.—Ib. 9.
30: se h. bebead him cweþende = comminatus est illis Jesus,
dicens.—Ib. 11. 25: se h. cewæ andswariende = respondens
Jesus dixit.—Ib. 12. 10: hi ahsudun hyne ðus cweþende =
terrogabant eum, dicentes.—Ib. 13. 31: He rehte ðæa
gyt oðer big-spel, ðus cweþende = . . . proposuit eis, dicens.
—Mk. 3. 11: ðus cweþende clypedon = clamabant dicentes.

Wulfst. 199. 15: be ðam awrat Iohannes on ðære bec,
ðæ man hat apocalipsin, ðus cweþende. So 201. 8.—Ib. 246.
11: swa se witega ðe læð ðus cweþende: sepi aures tuas
spinis.

Benet. 1 30. 14: gewrit bebyt sceþende = scriptura præcipit
dicens.

II. In Poetry.

Andr. 59: He ða wepende weregum tearum his sigelæhten
sargan reorde, grette gumena brego geomran stefne.

Christ 387: Forðan hy, dædiwæte, dome geswīðe, ðæt
sóðfaste seraphinnes cym, uppe mid englum a bremende,
unaœtendum sœnumm singað. [Hertel: pred. after
intransitive verb. ]—Ib. 992: Wepað wænende wergum
stefnum, heane, hygegeomre, hreowum gedreahete. [Hertel: attrib., but Gollancz: “weep and moan.”]

Guth. 401: Bonan gornedon, mendon murnende, ðæt etc. [May be adjectival or modal.]—Ib. 879: hwilum wæcede swa wilde deor eirmdon on corðre.

Jul. 662: Wæric me ðinceð, ðæt ge wæcede wið hettendra hildewoman weardhe healdan.

Spirit of Men 82: Forðon we sculon a hycgende hælo rædes gemma in mode mæle gehwylecum ðone selestan sigora waldend! Amen!

Harrowing of Hell 91: Sonne by gehyrdon, hu we hrew[ige] [mendon] murnende mæg burg usse. [May be adjectival or modal.]

Met. Ps. 104. 10: And him ða mid sôde sægde, cwecðende = Et statuit illud Jacob in præceptum, et Israel in testamentum æternum, dicens.—Ib. 105. 4: Gemune us, drihten, on mod-sefan forð hyegende folces ðines ð us mid hælo her geneose = Memento nostri, Domine, in beneplacito populi tui; visita nos in salutari tuo.—Ib. 138. 17: Blodhreowe weras! ge bebugað me, ðe ðæt on geðohtum ðenceð cwecðende = Viri sangninum declinate a me; quia dicitis in cogitationibus vestris. [Cf. 104. 10: where cwecðende = dicens.]—Ib. 146. 10: Ñe ðe mete syleð manegum neatum, hreñnes briddum, ðonne heo hropende him eigead to, cuðes ðeses = Sui dat jumentis escam ipsorum, et pullis corvorum invocantibus eum.

NOTES.

1. Present Participle in a Passive Sense.—I have found no instance of the present participle used in a passive sense in Old English. [Cf. Kellner, Syntax des Englischen Verbums, p. 85 f.; Koch, II, p. 72; Mätzner, II, p. 56; Sweet, § 2312; and, for the Germanic languages in general, O. Erdmann, Grundzüge, i, § 132 f.; Falk and Torp, § 138, 1; and Grimm, IV, p. 68.]
2. Passive Participle in an Active Sense.—The preterite participle of intransitive verbs has an active sense, such as *cumént*, *forðfered*, etc.: Bede\(^1\) 396. 20: in ðære he forðfered beþrygde beon sceolde = 228. 9: in quo defunctus conði debéret; *Ælfs. L. S.* 462. 351: oðþæt hi beconom to sumnum ænicumfelda fægæ geblæwen (*sic!*); *Bl. Hom.* 87. 36: beféaldæn to Hælendes eœoweum, he ðæwæð; *Mat.* 7. 6: hig ðonne ongean gewéende eow toslyton = conversi dirumptant vos. Cf. *beowæd* in *Mk.* 5. 30; *L.* 7. 9, 10. 23, etc. Occasionally, too, the past participle of transitive verbs has an active sense: *Greg.*\(^1\) 435. 1: gif hi feðæcor syngoden *ubeðohte* = 360. 7: si in his sola praecipitatione cecidissent (or adverb?); *Ælfs. L. S.* xxiv. 2: ðæren twegen kyningas on crist gelyfde; ib.: xxv. 109, xxviii. 15, etc. (see Statistics); *Ælfs. Hom.* 1. 66. 12: ðonne færlícæ gewitt he of ðissere wórulde, nacod and *forscyldigod*. But, as in High German (see Grimm as cited below), the use of the preterite participle in an active sense occurs usually, not when the participle is appositive, but when it is attributive or predicative, or has been substantivized; under one of which heads come most of the examples cited by Mätzner, March, Schrader, and Sohrauer. *Druncen in wine druncen* and in *beore druncen*, cited by Mätzner and by March as active, seems to me passive in sense. [See Kellner, *Syntax des Verbums*, p. 97 f.; Koch, ii, p. 72; Mätzner, iii, p. 93; March, § 455; Schrader, § 104; Sohrauer, p. 31; Sweet, § 2356; and, for Germanics, O. Erdmann, *Grundzüge I.*, § 133; Falk and Torp, § 138, ii; Grimm, iv., p. 73.]

3. Supplementary Particles.—Only slight use is made of supplementary particles, which serve the more clearly to indicate the relationship of the participial to the main clause. They seem to be confined to the late West Saxon prose. Examples: *swa swa*: *Ælfs. L. S.* xxiii. B. 234: ongan he sworetan *swa swa* cællunga gewæcched on ðám oreðe belæcen; *swa ðæah*: *Ælfs. Hept.* Numb. 15. 44: Hig *swa ðæah* ablænde
beotlice astigon = At illi contenebrati ascenderunt; *ib.* Ælf. L. S. xxxi. 42;—swa-ðeah-hweahere: Ælf. L. S. xxiii. B. 285; ic eom synful wif, swaðeahhweahere utan ymbseald mid ðam halgan fulluhte;—swilce: Ælf. Hom. i. 60b: Drusiana ða aras swilce of slepe awreht; *ib.* Ælf. L. S. 158. 174, xxv. 513, xxx. 411, etc.;—ða: Ælf. L. S. xxiii. B. 587: Zosimus ða witodlice gehyrende ðæt . . . he hire to cwæð; *ib.* Mk. 8. 13;—sone: Mat. 7. 6: hig sone ongean gewende cow tosliotn = et conversi dirumpunt; *ib.* Ælf. Hom. i. 38b; Ælf. L. S. xxiii. B. 115.—Mätzner (iii, pp. 73, 90) mentions only swilce.

4. Pleonastic "and."—As with the absolute participle (see Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon, p. 21) so with the appositive there is occasionally a pleonastic and; Bede¹ 450. 20; Oros.¹ 12. 32, 33; Bl. Hom. 243. 7; Ælf. L. S. xxiii. B. 542, 560, 588, etc., etc. The same is true of Gothic and of Old High German (Gering, p. 401).

I close this chapter with tables showing the distribution of the appositive participle in its several uses (adjectival, adverbia 1, and co-ordinate), in the whole of Anglo-Saxon Literature.
### Summary of Uses.

#### I.—In the Prose Works.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Total</th>
<th>Adjective</th>
<th>Adverbial</th>
<th>Co-ordinate</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Total Adj</td>
<td>Total Adv</td>
<td>Total Coord</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>No</td>
<td>W</td>
<td>Obj</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Badek</td>
<td>107</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pres.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pre.)</td>
<td>73</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boeth</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pres.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pre.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greg.</td>
<td>58</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pres.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pre.)</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oros.</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pres.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pre.)</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I. Th.</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pres.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pre.)</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chron.</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pres.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pre.)</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Laws</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pres.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pre.)</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. Hom.</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pres.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pre.)</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elf. Hom.</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pres.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pre.)</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elf. L.</td>
<td>227</td>
<td>93</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pres.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pre.)</td>
<td>199</td>
<td>134</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elf. de V.</td>
<td>233</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pres.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pre.)</td>
<td>155</td>
<td>132</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elf. Hept.</td>
<td>202</td>
<td>88</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pres.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pre.)</td>
<td>117</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A.-S. Hom.</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pres.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pre.)</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A.-S. Hom.</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&amp; L. S. S.</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pres.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pre.)</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.
### II. In the Poems.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Poem</th>
<th>Total Poetic</th>
<th>Total Poetic</th>
<th>Total Poetic</th>
<th>Total Poetic</th>
<th>Total Poetic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Beowulf</td>
<td>2885</td>
<td>2885</td>
<td>2885</td>
<td>2885</td>
<td>2885</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen.</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Excal.</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dan.</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christ</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eleon.</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jul.</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen.</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Excal.</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dan.</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christ</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eleon.</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jul.</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen.</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Excal.</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dan.</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christ</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eleon.</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jul.</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>320</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1. Without object, 385; with object, 101.
2. Without object, 271; with object, 5.
### SUMMARY OF USES.

#### II.—In the Poems.—Continued.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>ADJECTIVAL</th>
<th>ADVERBIAL</th>
<th>CO-ORDINATE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Minor Poems:</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Az. Pres.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Az. Pret.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cal. S. Pres.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charms Pres.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charms Pret.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christ's De Pres.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Creed Pres.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Creed Pret.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doomsday Pres.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doomsday Pret.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dream of Pres.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Good Pres.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Durham Pres.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Durham Pret.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eadgar Pres.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eadgar Pret.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eadward Pres.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eadward Pret.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fallen Pres.</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fallen Pret.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Angels Pres.</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Angels Pret.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fates of Pres.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fates of Pret.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Men Pres.</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Men Pret.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gloria Pres.</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gloria Pret.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.
### The Appositive Participle in Anglo-Saxon

- **Title:** The Appositive Participle in Anglo-Saxon
- **Page:** 295
- **Table**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Length of Middle</th>
<th>Without object, 62</th>
<th>With object, 95</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- **Footnotes:**
  1. Two in Lat.
  2. Without object, 62; with object, 95.
### SUMMARY OF USES.

#### III. In the Prose and in the Poetry.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>ADJECTIVAL</th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th>Co-ordinate</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pres. in Prose</td>
<td>1656</td>
<td>222 48</td>
<td>212 82</td>
<td>103 30</td>
<td>28 2 4 3 2 2</td>
<td>217 633</td>
<td>317 663</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres. in Poetry</td>
<td>148</td>
<td>222 48</td>
<td>212 82</td>
<td>103 30</td>
<td>28 2 4 3 2 2</td>
<td>217 633</td>
<td>317 663</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Pres</td>
<td>1784</td>
<td>270 107</td>
<td>107 39</td>
<td>238 62</td>
<td>2 105 1 1 10 9 20 1 564</td>
<td>223 21 762 45</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret. in Prose</td>
<td>807</td>
<td>227 84</td>
<td>39 10</td>
<td>238 62</td>
<td>2 105 1 1 10 9 20 1 564</td>
<td>223 21 762 45</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret. in Poetry</td>
<td>419</td>
<td>84 108</td>
<td>13 20</td>
<td>10 8</td>
<td>16 50 4 5 11</td>
<td>282 123 421</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Pret</td>
<td>1226</td>
<td>600 237</td>
<td>43 22</td>
<td>72 10</td>
<td>121 31 1 10 4 14 11</td>
<td>20 1 846 339 21 890 336</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Pres</td>
<td>1784</td>
<td>270 107</td>
<td>107 39</td>
<td>238 62</td>
<td>2 105 1 1 10 9 20 1 564</td>
<td>223 21 762 45</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Pret</td>
<td>1226</td>
<td>600 237</td>
<td>43 22</td>
<td>72 10</td>
<td>121 31 1 10 4 14 11</td>
<td>20 1 846 339 21 890 336</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grand Total</td>
<td>3010</td>
<td>879 344</td>
<td>231 38</td>
<td>210 38</td>
<td>154 74 5 35 25 8 16 13</td>
<td>232 638 1223 897 890 1822 1188</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
CHAPTER III.

ORIGIN OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

Is the appositive use of the participle a native English idiom, or is it borrowed from the Latin?

The only direct expressions that are known to me on this question are from Einenkel and myself. In his *Mittelenglische Syntax* (Münster, 1887), p. 273, in treating the present participle, Einenkel says: "Das Part. in appositiver Stellung (im Deutschen wiederzugeben durch Adjectiv-Satz) findet sich gelegentlich im AE., häufiger im Afranz., ist jedoch wol in keinem Falle ein einheimisches Gewächs, sondern stammt aus dem Lat., wo die Construction eine ganz gewöhnliche ist. Die verbale Kraft, die das so verwendete lat. part. besitzt, zeigt sich im AE. und Afranz." And in his chapter on English Syntax in Paul's *Grundriss*, § 129, he thus speaks of the preterite participle: "Zu erwähnen ist hier die schon im Altenglischen bekannte später zunehmende appositionelle Verwendung desselben, die vom Lateinischen hervorgerufen und später vom Altfranzösischen vielleicht auch vom Altnordischen unterstützt wird." Einenkel, then, holds that the appositive use of both the present and the past participle in Anglo-Saxon is due to Latin influence.

Before reading Einenkel's treatment I had come to the same general conclusion myself on noticing how sedulously Alfred avoided the use of the appositive participle in his translations from the Latin. And in my monograph on *The Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon* (p. 50), in treating of the stylistic effect of the participle in Anglo-Saxon, I incidentally recorded this belief: "Clearly relief was needed here [i. e., from the
heap ing up of co-ordinate finite verbs]; and it came through the adoption of the appositive participle from the Latin.”

An indirect statement concerning the origin is this by Th. Müller (p. 250): “Doch ist hinzuzufügen, dass die Verwendung der Participlen zur Satzverkürzung im Ags. eine ziemlich beschränkte ist, namentlich die Verwendung des absoluten Particips. . . . Im Englischen hat die Anwendung des Part. zur Satzverkürzung sehr an Umfang gewonnen, besonders durch Einwirkung des Französischen und Lateinischen . . . Im Ae. ist die Satzverkürzung durch das Participp. noch be- schränkt und nicht viel ausgedehnt, als im Ags.” A. Erdmann cautiously expresses himself as follows (p. 30): “However common this use [i. e., the appositive] of the participle present, as shown in II: 1:0, undoubtedly is, still the general run of the language seems to be opposed to the too frequent recurrence of it. There are to be found in the Gospels, in spite of the general closeness of the translation, numerous instances of co-ordinate finite verbs or subordinate clauses substituted for Latin-Greek participles present. In many of these passages the English translation readsmit the participle, conformably to the original text.” Owen (p. 61) seems to consider the construction native to English, though somewhat influenced by the Latin; but, as his statement is indefinite, it need not be quoted.

The statements of both Einenkel and myself were in the nature of the case incidental and general. May not the present detailed study of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon enable us to make definite statements with reference to at least several of the uses of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon? I believe it will; and I turn, therefore, to the consideration of the several distinctive uses of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon.

I. The Adjectival Use.

The appositive use of the present participle that is equivalent to a dependent adjectival (relative) clause, seems to have been largely due to Latin influence and never to have gained
a secure foothold in Anglo-Saxon, because, as my appended tables show:—(1) This use is rare in Early West Saxon. (2) In most of these Early West Saxon examples, the Anglo-Saxon participle is in direct translation of a Latin appositive participle. (3) The construction is rare, also, in the more original prose (the Chronicle, the Laws, and Wulfstan). (4) It is very rare, too, in the poetry; and most of these examples occur in poems known to be translations of Latin originals. (5) It is common in Ælfric, in the Gospels, and in Benet. Of the 13 examples in the Heptateuch all but 2 are translations from the Latin; of the 44 examples in the Gospels every participle except 1; and of the 32 in Benet all except 2. Despite this, it is possible that the appositive use of a few slightly verbal participles like blissigende and gefeonde (see Bl. Hom. 5. 8a & b, p. 186 above), and libbende and liegende (see Laws: Cnut ii, c. 24, Intr. a & b, p. 181 above) may be the native extension of the attributive use of such participles in postposition, the apposition arising from the fact that we have a series of participles, some with modifiers. [See above pp. 149, 152, and below on the origin of the adjectival appositive preterite participle.]

Whether the foregoing be accepted or not, this much seems certain: the appositive present participle with a direct object is not native to English, a topic the treatment of which is deferred to the close of this chapter (p. 307).

On the contrary, the adjectival use of the appositive preterite participle is probably native; or, if first suggested by the Latin, was soon naturalized. To me this use seems merely the extension of the attributive use of the preterite participle in postposition (see pp. 149, 152 above) when there was a series of participles modifying a single noun, or when the participle had an object or a somewhat extended adverbial modifier; as in: Ælf. Hept. (Exod. 12. 19): ne ete ge nan ðing onhafenes, ne utan eymene ne innan lande geborene; ib. 29. 23: Þu nymst . . . anne holne hlaf mid ele gesprengedne; Beow. 1126: Gewiton him ða wigend wica neosian freondum befeal-
len Fryslân geseon. This difference as to the origin of the appositive present and of the appositive preterite participle is not in reality so strange as may at first appear; for, as already stated in the Introduction, the preterite participle is much more adjectival in nature than is the present participle; and, as our statistics show, in Anglo-Saxon the appositive use of the participle (whether present or past, and in whatever function) is in keeping with this general principle: the construction is most frequent when the participle manifests most of its descriptive (adjectival) and least of its assertive (verbal) power.

Whatever the explanation, it is a fact that the adjectival use of the preterite appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon is far more common than that of the present participle, and it seems thoroughly naturalized, if not native. For our tables show (1) that the construction is common in Early West Saxon, in the more original prose works, and in the poetry, as well as in Ælfric, the Gospels, and Benet; and (2) that in the translations, notably in the Heptateuch, a considerable fraction of the appositive preterite participles used adjectivally are not translations of Latin participles.

The same distinction between the appositive present and the appositive preterite participle is found in the other Germanic languages (see chapter v).

II. The Adverbial Use.

1. Modal.

(1) Manner.

The appositive use of the participle (present and past) denoting manner, was probably native to Anglo-Saxon; if not, it was certainly early naturalized. We find this use very often in Early West Saxon, often in Ælfric and the Gospels, and occasionally in the more original prose and in the poetry. Moreover, in the translations, the Anglo-Saxon participle
corresponds not only to Latin participles, but also to Latin prepositional phrases, to nouns in the ablative, to finite verbs, to adjectives, and to adverbs; while in not a few cases there is no Latin corresponding to the Anglo-Saxon participle. Nor is the participle denoting manner confined to the poems known to be translations; on the contrary, the largest number of examples in any single poem is found in Beowulf. Finally, it may be said that in this use the participle has but slight verbal power; and hence the fact that the construction was native to Anglo-Saxon (or, if this be not allowed, was early naturalized), is what we should expect after what has been said above concerning the lack of verbal power in the Anglo-Saxon participle.

(2) Means.

The appositive use of the participle denoting means was in all probability not native to the English, but was borrowed from the Latin. It is found chiefly in the more direct translations and in the works of Ælfric, and in the former almost invariably corresponds to a Latin participle or to a Latin gerund in the ablative, in the majority of cases to the latter. It is practically unknown in the more original prose and in the poetry. Since the verbal power is more prominent in the participle denoting means than in that denoting manner, we need not be surprised at the difference in the origin (or the naturalness) of the two.

The modal participle in both of its uses has substantially the same history in the other Germanic languages (chapter v).

2. Temporal.

With the exception of a few slightly verbal participles like being, living, and sleeping, the temporal use of the appositive participle, strange as it may seem, can hardly have been a native idiom in Anglo-Saxon. When it occurs in the prose translations, it is with but a few exceptions a direct transla-
tion of a Latin appositive participle. Only two examples occur in the more original prose (Laws, 1: Ine C. 35: Æðæ þæþ hine þe hine fleonde for þæof sloge; and Wulfstan, 1: 295. 14: hi sculon fleonde on gefeonte beon ofslagene). As to the poetry, most of the examples occur in the poems that rest upon Latin originals. 14 examples, however, occur in Beowulf, nine in the present and five in the preterite (ljifigende: 815 and 1953; unljifigendum: 1389; slopende: 1581 and 2219; wesende (usually in composition with cnulti and umbor): 46, 372, 535, 1187; druncen (in beore and wine druncen): 480, 531, 1467; for-gewitenum: 1479, which may be adjectival; and fylle gef(r)agnod: 1333). But after all only five different words are involved; these are often used adjectivally, and the temporal use here may be partly due to that fact.* At any rate, the temporal use of the appositive participle can hardly be considered organic in a work showing only five words so used. Moreover, in Anglo-Saxon, time relations are normally denoted by a finite verb introduced by a subordinating conjunction, as is evidenced by its habitual rendering of the Latin temporal participle (see chapter iv).

In the other Germanic languages, also, the temporal use is restricted to participles of slightly verbal power, like being, living, sleeping (chapter v).

3. Causal.

The use of the appositive participle to denote cause seems, in the main, to be an imitation of the Latin. Few examples occur in Early West Saxon; and the majority of these as of those in other translations correspond to Latin participles, though a few answer to substantives in the ablative or to adverbs. The construction is exceedingly rare in the more

*Einenkel (Mittelengl. Syntax, p. 279) derives the temporal use of the preterite appositive participle from the adjectival (relative) use of the same.
original prose, there being but two examples in the *Chronicle* (1087 E: *geseonde*, which has an object and is therefore to be excluded from consideration; 449 A: Hengest *j* Horsa from Wyrtgeorne *gelaído", Bretta kyninge, gesohton Bretene (MS. E: *gelaído* Wyrtgeorn Angelein hider; MS. F: com Angel-cynn to Sisum lande, *gelaído* from Wyrtgeorne cinge) and two in Wulfstan (133. 5ᵃᵇ: seulon eowre heortan eargjan swide and eowra feonda meegen strangjan earle, and ge *tajeda* swide *afrikte* oft litel werod earhlice forbuga=" 131. 23: et animam uestrum tabescentem faciam, et persequuntur vos inimici uestri, et fugietis nullo persequite). In the poetry, but five examples occur with the present participle; two have an object (*Andreas* 1, and *Guidlac* 1) and are therefore not to be considered; while three occur in poems based on Latin originals (*Genesis* 2, *Exodus* 1). In all probability, then, the causal use of the present appositive participle is not native to Anglo-Saxon poetry. As to the past participle, as I have already said in a preceding chapter, many of the examples are doubtful and may be considered adjectival (relative). K. Köhler, for example, does not consider as causal any one of the nine examples that I have classed as such in *Beowulf*. Most of the other causal preterite participles in Anglo-Saxon poetry are in poems based on Latin originals; those in the prose have been discussed in the beginning of this paragraph.

It seems highly probable, therefore, that the causal use of the present participle in both prose and poetry is due to Latin influence; it seems probable that the causal use of the preterite participle is largely due to Latin influence, but that it is partly an extension of the adjectival use of the preterite participle, which latter has been shown to be so common in Anglo-Saxon. As is shown in chapter iv, the Latin causal participle is in Anglo-Saxon normally translated by a subordinated finite verb.

For the other Germanic languages, see chapter v.
4. Final.

The appositive participle denoting purpose is mainly from the Latin. But three examples occur in Early West Saxon, two corresponding to Latin participles and one to a Latin infinitive of purpose. No example has been found in the more original prose. The instances in the Gospels and in Beowulf correspond invariably to a Latin participle. The single example in the poetry (already quoted: Dan. 355: nerigende) is from a poem based on the Latin. A still further reason for considering the final use unoriginal is this: 35 of the 39 present participles have an object (see p. 307 below). But, as the statistics show that the final participle in Old English occurs, as in Latin (Gildersleeve, Latin Grammar, § 670, 3), chiefly after verbs of motion, it may well be that the very frequent predicative use of the participle in Anglo-Saxon after verbs of motion contributed somewhat to its appositive use to denote purpose.

See, further, chapters iv and v.

5. Concessive.

The concessive use of the appositive participle is likewise to be ascribed to Latin influence. Of the three examples found in Early West Saxon, two are direct translations of Latin participles; while the third (ungeniedde in Oros. 250. 14), though without a Latin correspondence in this particular instance, answers to (non)coacti, which occurs elsewhere in Alfred's Latin originals (as in Bede² 29. 12: co-acti = 8. 5: genedde). No instance of the concessive participle has been found in the more original prose. Each example in the Gospels is in translation of a Latin participle. Of the eight examples in the poems, that in Beowulf (2350: nearo nedende) is considered modal by K. Köhler; the other seven occur in poems known to be from Latin originals (one each in Elene, Genesis, Guðlac,
The appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon. 305

Juliana, Metres of Boethius; and two in the Phoenix. Moreover, the Boethius example translates a Latin participle. Compare chapters IV and V.


The appositive participle denoting a condition is probably due to Latin influence. Four examples occur in Early West Saxon, of which one corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (Bede 278. 18), one to a Latin absolute participle (Boeth. 91. 8), while two have no correspondents in Latin (Boeth. 30. 25, 26). Of the two examples in Benedict, one answers to a Latin participle, and one is without a correspondent. The two examples in the Gospels are translations of Latin participles, as are also the four in Benet. Only one example occurs in the remainder of Anglo-Saxon prose. Of the sixteen examples in the poetry, two are in Beowulf (1368: geswenced; 1370: geteled), one in Eadgar (11 A: geteled rimes) three in Genesis (geteled rime(s) in 1263, 1336, and in 2344), two in Exodus 232: geteled tiradigrn, 372: geteled rime), three in Andreas (309 (?): maximum bedeled, 883: twelfe getealde, 1035: geteled rime), two in Elene (2: geteled rimes, 634: geteled rime), two in the Riddles (24. 15: unbunden, 24. 16: searosceled), and one in the Metrical Psalms (67. 17: geteled rime).* In ten of these examples, however, the same word (geteled nine times, getealde once) is used; and, besides, the participle is not unmistakably conditional. From its frequent occurrence in Anglo-Saxon and its occasional employment in Old Saxon (Heliand 1251: tweliri gitalda), this seems to have been a favorite locution; but its use appears to have been phraseo-

*The translation of this phrase by Grimm (computati numero, note to Elene 1035 in his Andreas u. Elene), by Grein (gezählt der Zahl nach, in his Glossary sub v. rim), and by Kent (the number told, note to Elene 2) is, like the original, ambiguous, except that Kent does say that the participial phrase is used adverbially. Pratje (§ 158) considers the O. S. gitalda to be attributive.
logical rather than syntactical. The *Beowulf* examples, also, are doubtful. We know, too, that in Anglo-Saxon a condition is regularly denoted by a subordinated finite verb. I believe, therefore, that the use of the appositive participle to denote a condition is not a native English idiom, but was perhaps borrowed from the Latin.

See, too, chapters IV and V.

### III. The Co-ordinate Use.

The co-ordinate participle, in both its "circumstantial" and its "iterating" uses, is a direct importation from the Latin. No clear example of the co-ordinate participle occurs in *Gregory*, and only sixteen examples in the remainder of Alfred's works, each time in direct translation of a Latin participle. Three examples occur in the *Chronicle* and five in Wulfstan, all present participles with an object, and all due to Latin influence (see p. 307 below). No example is found in the *Laws*. With about a dozen exceptions all the examples in *Benedict*, in the *Gospels*, and in *Benet* are translations of Latin participles. In the *Prose Psalms*, however, only one of the sixteen co-ordinate participles answers to a Latin participle; but thirteen are present participles with an object, and, therefore, cannot be native English (p. 307).

In the poems, only nineteen examples occur: one in *Beowulf* (916: *flitende*), one in *Andreas* (59: *wepende*), four in *Christ* (387: *bremende*, 992: *wanende*, 950: *breeende*, 1016: *sorgende*), two in *Guthlac* (401: *murnende*, 879: *vedende*), one in *Juliana* (662: *weecende*), one in *Spirit of Men* (82: *hyegende*), one in the *Harrowing of Hell* (91: *murnende*), three in the *Metres of Boethius* (20. 212: *smegende*, 20. 214, 221: *secende*), and five in the *Metrical Psalms* (50. 56: *cerrende*, 104. 10: *eweponde = dicens*, 105. 4: *hygeonde*, 138. 17: *eweponde = dicitis*, 146. 10: *hropende = invocantibus*). With the exception of *Beow. 916* (which may not be co-ordinate) and of *Spirit of Men* 82 (of which I do not know the source), all the examples are from
poems known to be based on Latin originals. Two of the examples are in direct translation of Latin participles (Metr. Ps. 104. 10: cweðende = dicens; 146. 10: hropende = invocantibus), to which may confidently be added a third (Metr. Ps. 138. 17: ceceðende), though here answering to a finite verb, dicitis. Finally, the majority of the remaining examples (like brecende, murnende, sorgende, wæccende, wanende, wedende, and wæpende) really waver between the co-ordinate use on the one hand and the adjectival and the modal on the other; indeed, brecende, murnende, sorgende, and wanende are expressly declared to be attributive by Hertel and by Furkert, and I have put them here despite their extreme doubtfulness merely to avoid the appearance of bending statistics to conformity with a theory. The few clear cases that remain of the co-ordinate use (like cerrende, hycgende, secende, and smeagende) may, I think, safely be attributed to Latin influence. The Latin co-ordinate participle is in Anglo-Saxon usually rendered by a co-ordinate finite verb (chapter iv).

The co-ordinate participle is likewise uncommon in the other Germanic languages (chapter v).

The Governing Power of the Participle.

1. The Present Participle.

I conclude with a remark that applies equally to each of the three uses of the appositive participle: the present appositive participle with a direct object, no matter whether its use is adjectival, adverbial, or co-ordinate, is always in imitation of the Latin. For the Anglo-Saxon present participle, when used appositively, seems originally not to have had the power of governing a direct object in construction,—a fact not noticed hitherto so far as I am aware. This statement is substantiated, I believe, by the following considerations:—

1. Very few examples of a present participle having an object occur in Early West Saxon. Only eighteen examples
have been found in the works of Ælfric, distributed as follows: Bede 14, Gregory 2, Orosius 2.

2. With two exceptions each of these eighteen examples in Early West Saxon is a translation of a Latin appositive participle with a direct object. In one of the exceptional cases (Greg.¹ 171. 13: herende (MS. C.: beoð herende) = 126a: praedicando) the Anglo-Saxon participle translates a Latin gerund in the ablative; in the other (Oros.¹ 52. 27) the accusative seems to belong to the finite verb as well as to the participle (see Statistics).

3. In hundreds of instances the Early West Saxon translators (Ælfric and his helpers) clearly avoided turning the Latin participle with an object by an Anglo-Saxon participle with an object (see chapter iv).

4. An object is exceedingly rare in the more original prose works, there being but four examples in the Chronicles, one in the Laws, and six in Wulfstan; in all eleven instances.

5. In every one of these eleven examples the participle can be traced directly or indirectly to a Latin source. In the Chronicle, biddende (1083 E), ƿerende, which occurs twice (656 E, 675 E, both already quoted above), and gesende (1087 E), may be due to the Latin petens, dicens, and videns, which latter occur so often in the Vulgate New Testament, in Gregory’s Cura Pastoralis, in Bede’s Historia Ecclesiastica, and in other books that we may assume to have been in the hands of the compiler of MS. E., especially as this ms. is itself occasionally interlarded with Latin. Or, since it was written about 1121 (Plummer, II, § 26), the editor of E. could have borrowed these participles from the Anglo-Saxon Gospels or from the works of Ælfric, in both of which they abound. The single example in the Laws (Wihtr. C. 18: Preost hine clænsic sylfes soð, in his halgum hraegle ætforan wifoðe, ðas eve-ðende: “Ueritatem dico in Christo, non mention”) may confidently be ascribed to Latin influence, not only that it is eveðende, but that the participle is immediately followed by a quotation in Latin. As to Wulfstan, four of the examples
are cwēsēnde (105. 30, 199. 15, 201. 8, 246. 11), which here as elsewhere is to be ascribed to Latin influence. dicens (dicentes) occurs five times in Wulfstan, though not in the above examples; twice it is translated by a co-ordinated finite (60. 14, 87. 15) and once by a subordinated finite verb (87. 18), and twice it is not translated at all (31. 32, 77. 3). Moreover, in two instances (201. 8, 246. 11) cwēsēnde immediately precedes a quotation in Latin. The other two examples in Wulfstan (244. 7\(^b\): gemende, 278. 9: Sanejende; see Statistics) sound like translations from the ritual. Be this as it may, the participle may unhesitatingly be ascribed to Latin influence; for in Wulfstan there are interlarded with the Anglo-Saxon fourteen Latin present participles with an object.

6. Very few objects are found with the present participle in the poetry, only twenty-three in all, distributed as follows: Beowulf four (1227: dream healdende; 2106: fela friegende (but K. Köhler considers fela an adverb); 2350: nearo neftende; 1829: see hettende, which may be substantival, as K. Köhler construes it), Cynewulf’s Christ one (1271: wrec vinnende, Grein\(^1\) and Gollancz\(^1\&\(^2\)): wrecvinnende), Andreas three (570: dom agende, 491: mere hrerendum, mundum freorig, 300: wine færwendende), Elene two (1096: god hergendra, 1220: god hergendum), Doomsday one (112: dea\(^3\) beaenigende tacen = signa minantia mortem), Judith one (272: mid toðon torn sōligende: cf. Ps. 111. 9.: torn toðum sōlian = dentibus fremere), Daniel two (355: feorh nērigende, 396: lean sēllende), Guthlac one (1029: torn sōliende: cf. Judith 272), Juliana one (6: god hergendra: cf. Elene 1096, 1220), Spirit of Men one (82: hyeggende hælo reedes), Wonders of Creation two (14: friegende fira cynnes, 15: seeegende searo-runa gespon), Metrical Psalms four (104. 10: cwēsēnde = dicens; 138. 17: cwēsēnde = dieitis; 105. 17: hædænstyrces hig elendes = in similitudinem comedentis fœnum; 105. 4: gemune us, drihten, on modsefan for’s hyeggende folces ðines = memento nostri, Domine, in beneplacito populi tui). Of
these twenty-three participles, three (Doomsday 112, Metr. Ps. 104. 10 and 105. 17) are direct translations of corresponding Latin participles with an object; and to this class we may add a fourth (Metr. Ps. 138. 17), for the cwēsende here, though corresponding to dicitis, must be due to diceus, which occurs not infrequently in the Latin Psalms. But what about the remaining nineteen examples? In the first place it is to be noticed that, except in four instances (Spirit of Men 82, Wonders of Creation 14 and 15, and Metr. Ps. 105. 4), the object immediately precedes its participle; that, though they are not so printed in Grein-Wülker, possibly we have accusative compounds (except in Beow. 1829), which compounds are in the main descriptive epithets, as are the hyphenated accusative compounds. And an object in an accusative compound seems to me to stand on an entirely different footing from an object in construction (cf. Strong, Logeman, Wheeler, p. 334, and Storch, p. 25). The accusative compound is often made because the Anglo-Saxon had no single word for the idea to be expressed, as when the translator of the Psalms (81. 2) turns the Latin peccator by syn-wyrcende, etc. Oftener, perhaps, the compound is made for the sake of its picturesqueness; hence it is more frequent in poetry than in prose. That the participles which govern an object in composition do stand by themselves and that their governing an object in composition does not necessarily imply an antecedent power of governing an object in construction is attested, I think, by the fact that only one or two of the participles with an object in composition are found, also, with an object in construction. This principle by itself might account for most of the participles under consideration. But we see, further, that of these participles eleven occur in works known to be translations from the Greek or the Latin (Andreas 3, Christ 1, Elene 2, Judith 1, Daniel 2, Guthlac 1, Juliana 1), and the participles here may be due in part to the influence of the participles in the originals, even if at times, as in the two examples from the Elene, the Anglo-Saxon participles correspond, not to
Latin participles, but to Latin finite verbs. It will be observed, also, that in these eleven examples there are only eight different participles, the participle of hergian occurring three times and that of folian twice. As to the four participles with objects following in construction, I think that they must be ascribed to foreign influence, though I cannot definitely trace that influence in three of the examples, as I do not know the sources of the Spirit of Men and the Wonders of Creation. Hyegende of Metr. Ps. 105. 4 may safely be ascribed to the influence of the Latin participles of the Psalter, though none is found in the particular verse corresponding to this line.

7. An object is likewise rare in the other Germanic languages, especially in High German and in Old Saxon, as will be shown in chapter v.

8. The only fact known to me that seems to militate against the assumption that the present participle in Anglo-Saxon had not, originally, the power of governing an object, is this: in the Prose Psalms there are thirteen examples of the present participle with an object, no one of which is known to have a Latin appositive participle as its original correspondent. All of these participles occur in the Introductions to the Psalms. And, in his very able discussion of the Paris Psalter (p. 64 ff.), Bruce has shown that these Introductions are paraphrases of Latin originals, principally of the argumenta in the commentary In Psalmorum Librum Exegesis. In the originals as given by Bruce I find but two correspondences to our participles: in Psalms 34 siofigende corresponds to a substantive in the ablative with a genitive modifier (Dauid sang ðysne feower and ðrittigoðan sealm, siofigende to Drihtne his yrwaða = occasione erummarum suarum David hunc psalmum in tempore Jeremie componit, etc.), and in Ps. 38 to an ablative absolute (Dauid sang ðysne eahta and ðrittigoðan sealm, sefigende to Drihtne, mið hu manegum unrotnessum he was ofdryced under Sawle = Angentibus sub Saule macroribus, hune
psalmum cecinit etc.); while in the remaining eleven examples (37: andetende, 28: bebeodende, 33: gehatende, 39: gylpende (w. gen.), 32: herigende, 47: myelende, 37: seofi-gende: 43: seofigende, 32: Șanciende, 45: Șanciende, 31: wundriende (w. gen.)) there is no Latin correspondence. It will be observed, however, that, since one word is repeated four times (seofi-gende) and another twice (Șanciende), only seven words are involved; that, although there are no participles in the Latin corresponding to the Anglo-Saxon participles, participles are abundant in the Latin originals; that, as Bruce shows, the Prose Psalms are the work of an ecclesiastic; and that the Anglo-Saxon participles are those the Latin correspondents of which must have been often before the eyes and upon the lips of an ecclesiastic (such as confitens, postulans, beneficens, etc.). While, then, in the Prose Psalms the number of present participles with an object for which no immediate Latin source has been found, does seem to militate against the statement that originally in Anglo-Saxon the present participle had not the power of governing an object, in reality it does not: the author was an ecclesiastic and naturally molded his English translation on the pattern of what was at once his official language and his literary source.

9. In Late West Saxon, to be sure, especially in Ælfric and in the Gospels, there are numerous present participles with direct objects; but this fact does not invalidate the contention that in Anglo-Saxon the present participle had not the governing power originally. It will be observed, further, that in the Late West Saxon translations the participles with objects usually correspond to Latin participles with objects (25 times out of 36 in the Heptateuch, 117 times out of 122 in the Gospels, and 62 times out of 63 in Benet); and that in scores of instances the Latin participle is translated into Anglo-Saxon by a finite verb. The frequency of the participle with an object in Ælfric's Homilies and in his Lives of Saints is due, of course, to the fact that, as he tells us, these
works are translations from the Latin. The rareness of the present participle with an object in the poems and in the more original prose, especially in the late Wulfstan, would seem to indicate that, despite its great frequency in Ælfric and in the Gospels, this construction was never thoroughly naturalized in Anglo-Saxon.

10. Whenever it does govern an object, the present participle, as our examples show, has the same regimen as the verb from which it is derived. We find as object occasionally the genitive (Gregory 99. 4: wilhigende; Metr. Ps. 105. 4: hyegende; etc., etc.) and the dative (Bede 426. 30: bioswirigende; Ælf. Hom. ii. 128 b: Æcowigende; etc., etc.), but usually the accusative (see Statistics).—In the preceding discussion as to the origin of the present participle with a direct object I have included not only the accusative, but all the cases that from the modern English standpoint appear to be direct objects and, in the Early West Saxon texts and in the poems, all participles with objects, whether direct or not.

2. The Preterite Participle.

1. With reference to the preterite participle, the word object, as stated in the prefatory note to the Statistics, is used to include not only the object in the ordinary sense, but also any noun modifier of the participle. We find with the preterite participle the object in the genitive (Ælf. L. S. xxiii. B. 442: alces fylstes bedecele; Beow. 845: niða ofecremen; Gen. 2344: geteleed rimes; etc., etc.), the dative (Ælf. Hom. i. 544 b 3: deorum geferlche; ib. ii. 314 b: beboda mannum gesette; Bede 172. 26: Æisse ðæmann Gode gehaldgodre ware; etc., etc.), and the instrumental (Bede 214. 11: onylsed ðy lichoman; ib. 344. 28: ðy betstan leode geyleungen; etc., etc.). This use of the preterite participle occurs both in the prose and in the poetry, but much more frequently in the latter. The construction seems to be thoroughly natural in Anglo-Saxon.
2. In the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature, however, I have found but one instance of an appositive preterite participle governing an accusative of the direct object, namely, *Luke 9. 55* (MSS. B. & C.): *hine bewend*, he big *sreade* = *conversus* increpavit illos. The remaining three MSS. and the corresponding Glosses here use a finite verb (see p. 225); and Professor Bright in his footnote to the above passage considers *bewend* a slavish translation of the Latin participle. It is scarcely possible to consider as original a construction of which but one example is found in our texts. I believe, therefore, that in Anglo-Saxon the past participle, when used appositively, did not have the power of governing a direct object.

I append tables showing the Latin correspondences of the Anglo-Saxon appositive participles, in their several uses, in the more definite Anglo-Saxon translations from the Latin.
### Bede.¹

**A.-S. Ptc. without Object.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Boethius.¹

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### GREGORY.  
#### A.-S. Ptc. without Object.

#### Latin equivalent.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>1 Pres...</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>3 Pres...</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>6 Pres...</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>6 Pres...</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>1 Pres...</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>0 Pres...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>0 Pres...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>0 Pres...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### OROSIUS.  

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>2 Pres...</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>4 Pres...</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>0 Pres...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>2 Pres...</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>0 Pres...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>1 Pres...</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>0 Pres...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>3 Pres...</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

¹ Is in the dative.  
² These are in the genitive.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

METRICAL PSALMS.

A.-S. Ptc. without Object.

Latin Equivalent.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

BENEDICT.1

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>6</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## HEPTATEUCH

### A.-S. Ptc. without Object.

**LATIN EQUIVALENT.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Use</th>
<th>A.-S. Ptc.</th>
<th>A.-S. Ptc. with Object</th>
<th>LATIN EQUIVALENT.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>3  2  1  2  1  16</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>6  4  1  6  1  1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>1  4  1  1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>0  0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>0  0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>1  1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cone.</td>
<td>0  0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>0  0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>11  5  3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### THE GOSPELS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>24</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>20</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>10</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>11</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cone.</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>75</td>
<td>71</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### METRES OF BOETHIUS.

**A.-S. Ptc. without Object.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj. { Pret.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod. { Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp. { Pret.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus. { Pres.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin. { Pres.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc. { Pret.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Concl. { Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord. { Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**A.-S. Ptc. with Object.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj. { Pres.</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>16</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>15</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod. { Pres.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp. { Pres.</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>19</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus. { Pres.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin. { Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc. { Pret.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Concl. { Pret.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord. { Pres.</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>7</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

**BENET.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj. { Pres.</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>16</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>15</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod. { Pres.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp. { Pres.</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>19</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus. { Pres.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin. { Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc. { Pret.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Concl. { Pret.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord. { Pres.</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>7</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**PROSE PSALMS.**

A.-S. Ptc. with Object.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret..........</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fln.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret..........</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

LATIN EQUIVALENT.

A.-S. Ptc. without Object.

LATIN EQUIVALENT.
CHAPTER IV.

THE ANGLO-SAXON RENDERING OF THE LATIN APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE.

When not turned by an appositive participle, the Latin appositive participle is translated into Anglo-Saxon as follows:

I. NORMALLY BY A CO-ORDINATED FINITE VERB.

Most frequently the Latin appositive participle is rendered in Anglo-Saxon by a co-ordinated finite verb, though the texts vary widely, as is evident from the table in the footnote. That the co-ordinated finite verb is the most frequent rendering of the Latin appositive participle, while the subordinated finite verb is the commonest translation of the Latin absolute participle (see The Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 36), is doubtless due to the fact that not a few of the Latin appositive participles have what we have denominated the "co-ordinate" use; and this rendition is, therefore, more appropriate for the appositive than for the absolute participle.

The proportion of co-ordinated to subordinated finite verbs is as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text</th>
<th>Ratio</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bede³</td>
<td>2.14:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benedict¹</td>
<td>1:1.97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benet⁴</td>
<td>1:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Genesis¹</td>
<td>5.36:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gregory¹</td>
<td>1:1.56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Matthew¹</td>
<td>3:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poetical Psalms</td>
<td>1:1.88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prose Psalms</td>
<td>1:1.27</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The ratio of the total co-ordinated to the total subordinated finite verbs in these works is 1.35:1.
But it must be allowed that no principle has been consistently followed throughout by the Anglo-Saxon translators; and that not infrequently this rendition ignores shades of meaning in the original, and at times does positive violence to the sense. Undoubtedly, however, the modification of the sense of the original is often deliberately made by the translator because of his different conception of the relative importance of the ideas denoted by the Latin verb and the Latin participle.

The co-ordinated verb is usually in the indicative, though occasionally in the optative or the imperative. As a rule, the co-ordinated verb occurs in the same sentence as the verb with which it is co-ordinated, but occasionally it stands in an independent sentence. The clauses are generally united by a conjunction, but sometimes there is no connective.

A few examples will suffice to illustrate the range of the construction:

(1) Co-ordinated Indicative: (a) With a verb in the same sentence: *Bede*² 21. 9: *relinquens reuersus est = 40. 1*: *wæs forhæfende ð hwearf*; *Greg.²* 62. 7: *Hinc per Isaiah Dominus admonet, dicens = 91. 19*: *forðam myndgode Dryhten ðurh Essaiam ðone witgan ð cwæð*; *Mat. 12. 25*: *sciens dixit = wiste ð cwæð*; *Gen.²* 22. 3: *Abraham consurgenstravit etc. = A. ðre*. . . . and ferde.—Other examples: *Bede*² 98. 34 (122. 9), 100. 13 (124. 21); *Greg.²* 24. 2 (45. 13), 76. 18, 21 (111. 6, 9); *Gen. 42. 7, 9*; *Mat. 24. 2, 25. 18*; etc., etc.—(b) With a verb in another sentence: *Greg.²* 70. 17: *Coram testamenti area Dominum consulit, exemplum . . . rectoribus probens = 103. 6*: *frægnum ðæs Dryhten beforan ðære earce. . . He astealde on ðæm bisene*; *Gen. 42. 3*; etc.

(2) Co-ordinated Optative: *Greg.²* 394. 23: *ne in semetipsis torpentes opere alios excitent voce = 461. 15*: *ðyles he ðre awecce mid his wordum, ð himself astlawige godra weorca*; *Bede²* 112. 12, 13: *adueniens . . . peruluiuerit, qui . . . ingrediens . . . exierit = 136. 1, 2*: *Cume an spearwa,*
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 323

... fleo ß cume... ut gewite.—Other examples: Bened.² 56. 2 (29. 6), 56. 8 (29. 12); 58. 16 (31. 11); Mat.² 22. 24; etc.

(3) Co-ordinated Imperative: Greg.² 150. 24, 25: Et vos domini eadem facite illis, remittentes minas, scientes quod et illorum et vester Dominus est in cælis = 203. 1: Ge hlafordas, doð ge eowrum monnum sæt ile be hira andeow & gemetgierd &one &rean; geðencas sæt ægder ge hira hlaford ge eower is on hefenum.—Other examples: Mat.² 5. 24, 9. 13, 10. 7; Ps. Th.² 17. 48; etc.

II. FREQUENTLY BY A SUBORDINATED FINITE VERB.

Almost as frequently as by a co-ordinated finite verb the Latin appositive participle is translated by an Anglo-Saxon subordinated finite verb, introduced by a conjunction that indicates the relation sustained by the Latin participle to the principal verb. The dependent verb in Anglo-Saxon is more commonly in the indicative, though occasionally in the optative; while at times the form of the verb is ambiguous. The use of the indicative or the optative rests upon the well-known distinction between these two moods, but the principle is not infrequently ignored. I cite examples of each mood. In the main, the examples are arranged according to the use of the appositive participle in Latin:—

1. The Latin Temporal Clause is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by a temporal conjunction or conjunctional phrase: usually by ða, ða ða, ðonne; less frequently by after ðam ðe, after ðon ðæt, mid ðy, ðð ðæt, siðdan, sona swa, swa, swa swiðe swa, ða healle ðe. Examples: (1) Indicative:—ða: Mat.² 27. 24: Uidens autem pilatus ... lavit manus = ða geseah p.... ða ... he ðwoh his handa; ib. 8. 8; Bede² 91. 5 (112. 2), 91. 30 (112. 26); Greg.² 70. 23 (103. 11); Gen.² 28. 18, 30. 9; etc.; ða ða: Bede² 87. 4 (106. 24); Greg.² 136. 5 (181. 17); Gen.² 3. 8; etc.; ðonne: Greg.² 8a (27. 17), 32. 15 (57. 2); Ps. Th.² 21. 11; Bened.² 152. 12 (85. 9); etc.; after ðam ðe: Greg.² 216. 23
Note.—The Latin Co-ordinate Participle, though normally translated into Anglo-Saxon by a co-ordinated finite verb (see above, p. 321), is sometimes translated by a subordinated finite verb, which clause is temporal. Thus in *Greg.* 156. 3 (increpat, *dicens* = 207. 14 tælde, *sa he ceweð*) we have as the translation of *dicens* the dependent *sa he ceweð* instead of the more common independent and *he ceowe* (*Greg.* 98. 16 (137. 16), etc.). I have noted about thirty examples of *dicens* = *sa he ceowe* in *Greg.* and about forty examples of *dicens* = *and he ceowe*. Besides, the Anglo-Saxon dependent temporal clause is substituted for other co-ordinate participles of the Latin.

2. The Latin Relative Clause is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by a relative pronoun. Examples:—(1) Indicative: *Bened.* 72. 14: *Lectiones ad ipsum dam pertinentes dicantur* = 39. 9: reedinga syn gesungene, *se to sam freolsdæge belimpæð*; *ib.* 2. 6, 8 (1. 7, 9); *Greg.* 18. 2 (37. 22); *Bede* 92. 8 (114. 6), 94. 28 (118. 12); *Gen.* 23. 17; *Mat.* 22. 11, 25. 29, 25. 34; *Ps. Th.* 3. 6; *etc.*, *etc.*—(2) Optative: *Bened.* 44. 8: *Securrilitates vero vel verba otiosa et risum movientia* eterna clausura in omnibus locis damnamus = 22. 5: *gegafspræce and idele word and sa word, se leahter astyrien . . . we . . . forbeodað*; *Greg.* 126. 26 (173. 8); *Bede* 57. 17 (80. 25).
3. The Latin Causal Clause is rendered by a subordinated finite verb introduced by *forðæm*, *forðæm* *se*, *forðon*, *forðon* *se*, *mid* *sy*. Examples:—(1) Indicative: *forðæm*: Greg.² 50. 14: *ad exemplum aliiis constitutus = 77. 13: *Forðæm he bis gesett to bisene ðrum monnum*: Ps. Th. 18. 7;—*forðon*: Greg.² 52. 9 (79. 10); Bede² 6. 9 (2. 19); *forðæmse*: Greg.² 210. 1 (276. 15 Cot.), ib. 232. 12 (305. 2); Bede² 116. 3 (142. 1); *for Son* *se*: Bede² 309. 10 (432. 30); *mid* *sy*: Bede² 12. 13 (28. 18) (or Temporal?).

4. The Latin Conditional Clause is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by *gif*. Examples:—(1) Indicative: *Greg.² 44. 6*: Pupilla namque oculi... albuginem tollens nil videt = 69. 18: *gif* hine *sone* *sæt* fleah *mid* ealle *qfergar* *S*, Sonne *ne* mag *he* noht *gesion*; ib. 208. 25 (277. 8); Bede² 98. 8 (120. 22); Benedict² 86. 17 (46. 16), 96. 20 (52. 4); Mat.² 21. 22.—(2) Optative: *Greg.² 22. 23*: Cui volenti in faciem mulier spuit = 45. 2: *Gif* hire *sone* *se* widsace, *sone* is *cyhn* *sæt* him spiiwe *sæt* wif on *sæt* nebb.

5. The Latin Concessive Clause is turned by a subordinated finite verb introduced by *seah*, *seah* *se*. Examples:—(1) Indicative: *seah*: Greg.² 192. 3: *non levabo caput*, *saturatus* afflictione et *miseria* = 253. 8:... *seah* *ie* *eon* *gesyffled* *mid* *broce* & *mid* *iernrum*.—(2) Optative: *seah*: Greg.² 34. 19: *co-actus = 59. 10: *seah* hiene *mon* *niede*; ib. 42. 18 (67. 23); Ps. Th.² 3. 5; *seah* *se*: Greg.² 68. 7 (99. 9), Bede² 57. 29 (82. 4), 272. 28 (368. 16).

6. The Latin Final Clause is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by to *sæm* *sæt*, to *sy* *sæt*, *sæt*, *se* *les*, *se* *les* *se*, *sylges*. Examples:—(1) Indicative: I find no example.—(2) Optative: *sæt*: Mat.² 14. 15: *dimitte turbas, ut eundes in castella estam sibi escas = forlæt ðas manegco *sæt* hi faron... *g him mete biegean*: Greg.² 122. 19 (167. 17); to *sæm* *sæt*: Greg.² 246. 20 (319. 20); to *sy* *sæt*: Benedict² 204. 15 (132. 15); *se* *les*: Mat.² 13. 29; *se* *les* *se*: Gen.² 32. 11; *sylges*: Greg.² 90. 2, 4 (127. 14, 15), 180. 13 (239. 2).
7. The Latin Modal Clause is turned by a subordinate finite verb introduced by *swa swa*, *swelce*. Examples:—
(1) Indicative: *swa swa*: Greg.² 348. 14: ut qui voluptatibus delectati discessimus, fletibus amaricati redeamus = 425. 14: sætte us biterige sio hroowsung, swa swa us ær suetendon ða synna; Mat.² 9. 36; etc., etc.—(2) Optative: *swelce*: Greg.² 156. 6: quasi compatiens = 207. 17: swelce he efnuiðe him bare; ib. 80. 22 (117. 1), 94. 30 (135. 1); Bened.² 180. 6 (113. 25).

8. The Latin Consecutive Clause is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by *swa scet*, *scet*, *sætte*. Examples:—(1) Indicative: *swa sæt*: Mat.² 13. 2: congregate sunt ad eum turba multae, ita ut in naviculam adscendens sederet = mycle mænigeo weron gesannade to him swa sæt he code on sceyp ðæ sæt; Bede² 278. 11, 12 (378. 20, 21); sæt: Bede² 116. 4 (142. 2); Bened.² 188. 15 (124. 5); sætte: Greg.² 182. 7 (241. 3).—(2) Optative: *sæt*: Greg.² 34. 21: caveat ne acceptam pecuniam in sudarium ligans de ejus occultatione judicetur = 59. 13: healde hine sæt he ne enlytle sæt underfongne fcoh on ðæm swathine; ib. 38. 14 (63. 15), 398. 20 (463. 13); sætte: Greg.² 164. 23 (219. 7); *swa sæt*: Bened.² 12. 4 (5. 24).

III. By a Prepositional Phrase.

Not infrequently the Latin appositive participle is translated into Anglo-Saxon by a prepositional phrase.

(1) The phrase denotes Manner, Means, or Instrumentality, and is introduced by *mid*, *in*, *swirh*. Examples:—*mid*: Bened.² 52. 19: subsequuntur gaudentes et dicentes = 27. 11: ðus efterfylgendlice mid blisse cyphiað; ib. 104. 9: adjutus = 55. 16: mid heora fultune; Greg.² 274. 1: ivatus = 353. 20: mid his iere; *in*: Bede² 239. 18: Cristus incarnatus = 310. 26: Crist in menniscum lichoman; swirh: Bened.² 178. 15: admonitus = 113. 13: swirh wynnange.
(2) The phrase denotes Time, and is introduced by after, be, on, under. Examples:—after: Bede\textsuperscript{2} 110. 23: eodem perempto = 132. 14: after his slepe; on: Bened.\textsuperscript{2} 88. 12: dormientes = 47. 11: on slape; Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 218. 15 = 289. 10: under: Bede\textsuperscript{2} 114. 26: albat = 140. 4: under crisman (or Modal?).

(3) The phrase denotes Cause, and is introduced by for. Examples:—Bened.\textsuperscript{2} 96. 20: excommunicatus = 52. 5: for amansunget; Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 28. 12 (51. 14); Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 68. 18: miseratus = 99. 22: for mildheartnesse; Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 124. 5: supernse formi dinis et dilectionis spiritu afflatus = 169. 3: for Godes lufum; for Godes ege; Bede\textsuperscript{2} 32. 30: fame conquest = 54. 2: for hungre; Gen. 19. 29: Deus recordatus Abrahame liberavit Lot = alysde L. for Abrahame; Gen. 45. 3: nimio terorre perterriti = for ege.

(4) The phrase denotes Condition and is introduced by butan: Mat.\textsuperscript{2} 22. 25: non habens semen = butan bearne.

IV. By a Verb in the Infinitive Mood.

Occasionally the Latin appositive participle is translated by an infinitive. Examples:—(1) The Uninflected Infinitive: (a) Without a subject: Bened.\textsuperscript{2} 10. 13: Et si fugientes gehennae poenas ad vitam volumus pervenire perpetnam = 5. 5: And gif he hellewites susl willa-S and to ecum life cuman; Bede\textsuperscript{2} 99. 25: nerbis delectatus promisit = 122. 33: Da ongon he lustfullian Æs bishops wordum and geheht; etc.; (b) With a subject: Bede\textsuperscript{2} 46. 5: ad iussionem regis residencest = 58. 28: Da het se cyning hie sittan ... and hie ... bodedon; Mat.\textsuperscript{2} 27. 26.—(2) The Inflected Infinitive: Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 178. 25: ita nonnunquam quibusdam audita vera nocuerunt = 237. 11: sua dereð eac hwilum sumnum monnum Æt soð to gehierenne; Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 300. 15: ut cum ... tune quasi a nobismetipsis foras etiam alios instructes ex- eamus = 385. 9: Ac ef Sonne ... Sonne bio we of Ære ceastre ut aserene, Æt is of urum agnum ingedónce, Ætre
men to Iceranne; Bede² 8. 10: omnes ad quos hæc eadem historia peruenire poterit . . . legentes siue audientes suppliciter precor, ut = 486. 8: ic eaþmodlice bidde . . . Sætte to eallum ðæs ylce stær to becyme . . . to rædanne oððæ to gehyranne ðæt, etc.; Bede² 54. 24: si . . . actura gratias intrat = 76. 12: ðæah ðæs heo . . . Gode Soncunge to donne . . . gange; Ps. Th.² 9. 12.

V. BY AN ATTRIBUTIVE PARTICIPLE.

The Latin appositive participle is at times translated by an Anglo-Saxon attributive participle. Examples:—Bened.² 24. 13: ut non solum detrimenta gregis sibi commissi non patiatur = 14. 8: ðæt he him ðæs befresten cowdes nanne æfwirldlan næbbe; ib. 92. 14 (49. 18), 146. 11 (78. 10); Greg.² 22. 12 (43. 14), 126. 7 (171. 11); Mat. 17. 14.

VI. BY AN ABSOLUTE PARTICIPLE.

Rarely the Latin appositive participle is translated by an Anglo-Saxon absolute participle. Examples:—Mat.² 13. 1: In illo die exiens Jesus de domo, sedebat secus mare = On ðam dræge ðam hælende ut-gangendum of huse he sæt wið ða sæ; Mk² 5. 2, 16. 12; Mat.² 17. 14; Lk² 1. 63, 17. 7; Oros.² 33. 29 (34. 1). (See Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., pp. 8, 13.)

VII. BY AN ADVERB.

Occasionally the Latin appositive participle is turned by an adverb. Examples:—Greg.² 360. 18: Hinc iterum iratus dicit = 435. 11: he cwæð eft ierenga; Greg.² 402. 18, 21: cautus . . . sollicitus = 467. 1, 3: wærlice . . . geornlice; Ps. Th.² 16. 10: projicientes = forsewenlice.

VIII. BY AN ADJECTIVE.

The Latin appositive participle is at times translated by an Anglo-Saxon adjective. Examples:—Bede² 108. 32: scio . . .
queuentura tibi in proximo mala formidas = 128. 25: ic wat
... hwyle toweard yfel ūn ðe in neahnesse forhtast; Bede²
82. 5: adlatus est quidam... oculorum luce privatus = 100.
3: ða lædde mon forð sumne blindne mon; Mat.² 8. 16:
multos deemonia habentes = manegæ deofol-seoce.

IX. By a Substantive.

Rarely a Latin appositive participle is represented in Anglo-
Saxon by a substantive. Examples:—Bened.² 116. 7: Mensis
fratrum edentium lectio deesse non debet = 62. 3: Gæbro^ra
gereorde æt hyra mysum ne sceal beon butan rædinge; Greg.²
160. 16, 17: Egit... doctor, ut prius audièrent laudati, quod
recognoscerent, et postmodum, quod ejhortati sequerentur =
213. 20. 21: Sua gedyde se... læreow sæt hie æresð gehier-
don ða heringe ðe him licoede forðæm sæt hie æfter ðæm ðe
lusðlicor gehierden ða lære.
CHAPTER V.

THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN THE OTHER GERMANIC LANGUAGES.

I.

In the main, the uses of the appositive participle in the other Germanic Languages tally with those found in Anglo-Saxon. My discussion must be brief not only because of the want of space but also because of the lack of a comprehensive treatment of the appositive participle in these languages. But the treatises of Douse and of Gering answer admirably for Gothic; those of Falk and Torp, of Lund, and of Nygaard for the Scandinavian languages; those of Dietz, O. Erdmann, K. Förster, Mourek, Rannow, Seedorf, Seiler, and Wunderlich, for Old High German; that of Barz for Middle High German; and those of Behaghel and Pratje for Old Saxon. Mourek, Pratje, and Rannow do not classify their examples according to use. Perhaps it is not improper to state that, while this chapter is based on the statistics of others, the interpretation thereof is my own.

1. Gothic.

In the Introduction I have already commented on the unwisdom of Gering's excluding the adjectival (relative) participle from the appositive use. Ignoring this, we find the appositive participle freely used adjectivally, adverbially, and co-ordinately (though Gering does not use the last term). As Lücke has shown with reference to the absolute participle, so it is with the appositive participle: Ulfilas was a slavish translator; and his usage represents, I believe, the genius
of the classical (especially Greek) and not of the Germanic languages (see II. below). But at times even Ulfilas turns the Greek appositive participle by a finite verb, Gering (p. 313 ff., 399 ff.) giving not a few examples of the same (over fifty subordinate and twenty-five co-ordinate verbs); whereas the turning of a Greek finite verb by a Gothic appositive participle is very rare (four* examples, according to Gering, p. 401).

I append a few examples from Gering: I. Adjectival (Relative) (Gering’s attributive): Mat. 8. 9: Jah auk ik manna im habunds uf waldmuja meinamma gadrauhtius = Kāi γὰρ ἐγὼ ἀνθρωπὸς εἰμι . . . ἔχων ὑπ’ ἐμαυτὸν στρατιώτας; L. 2. 13: managei harjis hūminakundis, hāzjandane γὰρ jah gīpandane = Πλήθος στρατιῶν οὐρανίου αἰνοῦτων τῶν θεῶν καὶ λεγόντων; II. Adverbial: Mat. 27. 63: qaph nauh lihunds = eiptev eτι ζῶν (temporal); Mk. 6. 20: Herodis ohta sis Johanna, kwnands ina wair garahtana jah weihana = Ἡρώδης ἐφοβεῖτο τῶν Ἰωάννην, εἶδος αὐτὸν ἄνδρα δίκαιον καὶ ἀγιον (causal); J. 6. 6: patuh pan qaph fraisands ina = Τούτο δὲ ἔλεγεν πειράζων αὐτὸν (final); Mat. 6. 17: ἢ ἐν fastands salbo hanbih pein = Σὺ δὲ νηστεύον ἀλειψάι σου τὴν κεφαλῆν (conditional according to Gering, but may be temporal); Lk. 2. 48: sa atta peins jah ik winnanda sokidedum puk = ὦ Πατήρ σου κἀγὼ δυνάμενοι ἐξητούμεν σε (modal: manner); Mk. 6. 5: siukaim handuns galijands gahailida = ἀρρώστους ἐπιθεὶς τὰς χειρὰς ἐθέράπευσεν (modal: means, Gering’s instrumental); J. 7. 15: hwaiwa sa bokos kann unislaipis? = Πῶς οὗτος γράμματα οἶδεν μὴ μεμαθηκὼς (concessive, Gering’s limitative); III. Co-ordinate (not treated by Gering as such): Mat. 6. 31: Ni maunnaip nu gīpandans = Μή οὖν μεριμνήσετε λέγοντες; Mk. 9. 12: ἢ ἐστι ἀνδαfiltands qaph du im = ὦ δὲ ἀποκριθεὶς εἰπεν αὐτοῖς.

*But since, in making this statement, Gering limits himself to the adverbial uses of the appositive participle, there must be more than four examples in all. I have myself found about this number in Mark.
According to the statements of Lund, of Falk and Torp, and of Nygaard, the appositive participle has had the same history in the Scandinavian languages as in Anglo-Saxon.

As Lund’s *Oldnordisk Ordføjningslære* * is out of print, it is best, perhaps, to quote in full what he has to say of the appositive use of the participle in Old Norse, together with his examples (§ 149): “Tilkøgsformerne, især den handlinge, føjes (som hos-stillet) til et navneord i sætningen for at betegne en med hovedhandlingen samtidig (eller førtidig) handling eller tilstand, der står således i forbindelse med hovedhandlingen, at den ikke alene kan bestemme dens tidsforhold, men også dens måde og andre omstændigheder, som grund, anledning, betingelse, modsætning osv., hvilke forhold almindeligellers (som på Dansk) udtrykkes ved bisætninger (med bindeord eller henforende udtryk) eller ved en forholdsordsforbindelse. Skønt denne brug ikke er meget almindelig (som i Græsk og Latin), tjener den dog ikke sjælden til at give talen korthed og bøjelighed, da tilløgsformerne på denne måde kunne føjes ikke alene til sætningens grundord, men også til genstanden, hensynet og andre led deri.” Then follow his examples: Hlæjandivöllumhófskælpti, gráttandi Bóðvildrgekkoréyju.  *Völlumdrakkr.* 27.—(Hann) hafsítetik lax òr forsinnm ok át blundandi.  *Sn. Edd.* 72.—Ór hans síðu sosanda tökn guð eitt ríf ok fylldi rúm rífsins með hólði.  *Gisl.* 44, 66.—Sá sem norrænaði, kennandi sinn fátækðóm ok vanfæri tökn þetta verk upp á sík af boðskap ok försögn fyrris sagðs virðuligs herra.  *Stjórn* 2.—Sá er kaupir víis vitandi (*sciens, med sit vidende, således at han ved*) *Grág.* r., 15.—Hón drottningin þetta sjandi (hoe videns, ved at se dette) fylldist spáleiksanda ok mælti svá.  *Biskupa S.* 217.—At fengnum andsvörum spurdra luta ok ofraðu miklu fæ.  *Alex.* 51.—Drukkju jarlar

---

*For the loan of this book I am indebted to Professor James Morgan Hart, who also kindly called my attention to the work of Falk and Torp.*
öl jegiandi (tiende s: uden at råbe dertil), en øpanda ølker stóð. Herer. 41.—In the next paragraph (§ 150) Lund discusses the attributive use of the participle; and some of the examples there given would come under our “adjectival” use of the appositive participle.

In their recent work, Dansk-Norskens Syntax i Historisk Fremstilling, Falk and Torp briefly treat the appositive use of the participle not only in Old Norse but also in the modern Scandinavian languages. Their statement is an admirable supplement to that of Lund, and is worthy of quotation (§ 67. 3): “Apposition af participier forholder sig væsentlig som adjektivernes. Ved præsens particip forekommer appositiv brug i oldnorsk kun i hærd stil: hon mismorði etandi af tressins áveit; taluði på fyrrir sinum mormun svá mælandi. Endnu er udtryk som: jeg gik igang med arbeidet stolende paa hans loft; trodsende alle hindringer trængte han frem, fremmede for den ægte folkelige udtryksmaade. Den ældre kancellistil yndede saadanne vendinger; paa eet andhet stedt talindis om bandt siger han saa (P. Elies.); T. gick vd emod dennem berendis hostiam (Abs. Ped.); andre breffue lydendis at (St. D. Pr.); jeg befaler dig Gud ønskendis dig ald lyk-salighed (Pont.); befalendiss dig hermed gud og himmelen (Chr. VI.). Ved fortidsparticip findes appositiv brug i oldnorsk klassik prosa kun i et parenkle udtryk: þa laga þar fyrrir Danir kommir ór leiðangrí. I hærd skrifter forekommer ogsaa foranstillet apposition: utgenginn af skóla heldr hann sik nú upp á leiðmanna hatt; ór sínu valdi kastadr dó hann i myrkvastofu. Endnu er forbindelser som: forladt af alle døde han i ensomhed; opbragt herover pønsede han paa hævn, ganske uhjemlige og fremmede for godt landsmaal. Uden anstod er derimod den efterstillede apposition i udtryk som: Gud sendte sín son, født af en kvinde; til en by, kaldet Ephrem. I den ældre kunstige stil paatræffes vendinger som: rigdom ther ijde brughet giffer orsage till alwerdsins homodt (P. Elies.); aalije, ther mange menniskir smwrde met worde karseke (ib.). Sml. § 139, 1.” The section cited runs:
"Appositivt particip til betegnelse af den en hovedsætning underordnede handling, erstattende en relativ, tids- eller aarsags sætning, er i det hele og store en fremmed brug i nordisk: se § 67, 3. I vort skriftsprog er denne udtryksmaade ikke sjelden: han gik bort, pønsende paa hven; ankommen til byen, gik han straks ned til havnen. I dagligtalen anvendes den aldrig. Anderledes hvor participiet betegner subjektets tilstand under handlingen. Her fungerer det som adjektiv, idet dette kan anvendes paa samme maade: Guðrún grátandi gekk ór tóni; han gik slagen derfra (sml. han gik glad bort); se § 68, 2 b."

Nygaard considers that the use of the participle in Norse prose is largely due to Latin influence. As I have not had access to his article on Den Lærde Stil i den Nørvøne Prosa, I quote the summary of the Berlin Jahresbericht for 1896: "Der gelehrte stil zeigt sich in der nordischen prosa: 1. in der erweiterung des gebrauchs des part. præsens, das in volkstümlichen stile nicht allzu häufig angewendet wird. Auf dem gebrauch dieses part. hat im gelehrten stil das lat. part. præsens und das gerundium eingewirkt. 2. Auch der gebrauch des part. præt. ist in dem gelehrten stil wesentlich erweitert. Namentlich wird das part. præt. häufig mit præositionen (at, eptir) verbunden; wir haben hier eine konstruktion, die dem lat. abl. absol. entspricht."

3. High German.

(1) Old High German.

I have been surprised to find how closely the uses of the appositive participle in Old High German correspond to those in Anglo-Saxon. True, Tatian has no Anglo-Saxon counterpart, for he is as slavish in following his original as is Ulfilas; and has hundreds of examples of the un-Germanic co-ordinate participle. But the more original Otfrid and Isidor are quite different. In Otfrid and Notker the modal participle was
so common that it developed an adverbial ending in -o (O. Erdmann, Syntax der Sprache Otfrids, p. 219), as in Otfrid, iv, 12. 53: er fior ilonto; v., 9. 14: ir get sus drurento. The modal use is found, too, in Isidor. In Isidor and in Otfrid, again, the adjectival use of the preterite participle is common, while that of the present is comparatively rare, being limited as in Anglo-Saxon to participles with slight verbal power. The other uses are rare in both writers. Isidor, for instance, has only four examples of the co-ordinate participle, all from quedan; two are in direct translation of the Latin diceus, and we may add also the other two, though diceus does not occur in these two passages. But eighteen times Isidor translated a Latin co-ordinate participle by a finite verb (nine co-ordinated and nine subordinated). Clearly, then, if Isidor and Otfrid are true types, the co-ordinate participle was as unnatural in Old High German as in Anglo-Saxon. In the Benediktinerregel, finally, the present participle often answers to a Latin gerund in the ablative (Seiler, p. 470).

Examples: (1) Adjectival (Relative):—Tatian, 88. 2: Uuas sum man dar drizog inti ahto iar habenti in sinero ummahti = Erat autem quidam homo ibi triginta octo annos habens in infirmitate sua; Otfrid, iii., 20. 1: gisah einan man, blintan giboranan; Tatian, 107. 1: Inti uuas sum arm betalari gimen-nit Lazarus = Et erat quidam mendicus nomine Lazarus; (2) Adverbial:—Otfrid, i., 17. 73: sie wurunt slafente fon engilon gimanote (temporal); Tatian, 192. 2: Inti andern managu bismaronti quadun in inan = Et alia multa blasphemantes dice-bant in eum (modal: manner); Tatian, 12. 3: inti inan ni findonti fuorun uiidar zi Hierusalem inan swochenti (causal and final); Otfrid, v., 12. 26: er ingiang ungimerrit, duron so bisperrit (concessive); Otfrid, i., 8. 6: thiu racha, sus gidan, nam thes huara thana wan (conditional); (3) Co-ordinate:—Otfrid, 1 , 13. 18: barg thi分辨率 wort, in herzen ahtonti ; Tatian, 6. 6: Maria uuarlihho gihielt allu thisiu uuort ahtonti in ima herzen = M. autem conservabat omnia verba hace conferens in corde suo; Tatian, 54. 6: anteuurenti quad zi in = re-
spondens dixit ad illos; Tatian, 81. 2: sprah in quedenti = locutus est eis dicens.

(2) Middle High German.

The story is the same in Middle High German, if we may take Barz’s * statistics of the Nibelungenlied and Iwein as true for Middle High German in general. Here the adverbial participle denoting manner is very common, and we meet with sorgende, swigende, unwizzende, etc., as in Anglo-Saxon. But the adverbial participle denoting means is practically unknown, and the other uses of the adverbial appositive participle are rare. Those cited as temporal and as final occur in close connection with verbs of motion, and waver between predicative and adverbial uses. The adjectival (relative) use is almost exclusively confined to the preterite participle. The co-ordinate use is not known.

Examples from Barz:—(1) Adjectival (Relative): Nib. 2. 3: ein vil edel magedlin, daz . . . sin, Kriemhilt geheizen; Nib. 833. 2: die truogen liehte pfelle . . ., geworht in Arabin; (2) Adverbial: Nib. 1065. 1: vil lute serciende daz liut gie mit im dan (temporal); Nib. 2333. 3: ez giengen inwer helde zuo disem gademe gewqfent wol ze vlize (temporal); Nib. 502. 3: sorgende† walhte er (modal: manner); Iw. 3227: er stal sich swigende† dan (modal); Iw. 6113: daz ist unwizzende† geschehen (modal); Iw. 531: daz ich suochende rite einen man (final); ib. Iw. 4163, 5775.

(3) New High German.

The fullest recent treatment accessible to me of the appositive participle in New High German is that by von Jagemann in his Elements of German Syntax; of which this section of

* Paul does not treat the construction.
† Barz (p. 22) puts this under Adverbialer Gebrauch des Particiipiums, not Appositiver Gebrauch.
my paper is scarcely more than a summary. In § 124, 4a, he gives the three following examples of the appositive participle in New High German: "She sat weeping by the bedside of her mother = Sie sass weinend am Bette ihrer mutter; He entered the room in silence = Schweigend trat er in das Zimmer; Pierced by an arrow he sank to the ground = Von einem Pfeile getroffen sank er zu Boden." To me, however, the participle in the first example appears to be used predicatively. The remaining two are appositive, the former denoting manner and the latter cause. In § 125, notwithstanding, we are told: "Present participles should not be used in German to express adverbial relations of time, cause, or manner."* I do not know how to reconcile the italicized part of this statement with example two above, unless for the moment Professor von Jagemann had in mind the statement made in § 124, 3c: "A limited number of present participles are no longer felt as such, but as common adjectives, and they may therefore be used predicatively and adverbially*: He is absent = Er ist abwesend; She sang charmingly = Sie sang reizend;" and thought that he had put Schweigend trat er in das Zimmer under § 124, 3e instead of § 124, 4a. Be this as it may, his statement that the present participle may be used adverbially is in strict keeping with the tradition not only of High German, but also of the Germanic languages in general, so far as it is used to denote manner. The non-use of the present participle to denote time and cause is what our preceding investigation has led us to expect.

Again, we learn that the "adjectival" use of the present appositive participle is not allowed (§ 124, 4b): "This [i. e., the appositive] use of a participle, however, is not permitted in the numerous cases in which an important limitation of a noun is to be expressed. The participle should then be used attributively, before the noun, preceded by its own qualifiers

* The italics are mine.
(see § 231, 2); or else a relative clause should be substituted: The book lying on the table was a Greek Grammar = Das auf dem Tische liegende Buch war eine griechische Grammatik, or Das Buch, das auf dem Tische lag etc.; The candidate receiving the largest number of votes is elected = Der die meisten Stimmen erhaltende Candidat (or derjenige Candidat, welcher die meisten Stimmen erhält,) ist erwählt; I prefer an edition of Molière's works printed in France = Ich ziehe eine in Frankreich gedruckte Ausgabe von Molière's Werken (or eine Ausgabe von ... die in Frankreich gedruckt ist,) vor.

Finally, we are told that the "co-ordinate" use of the present participle is not common (§ 124, 4c): "A present participle should not, ordinarily, be used to express an idea as important as, or more important than, that expressed by the finite verb, but a co-ordinate verb should be used instead of the participle: He sat at his desk all day, writing letters = Er sass den ganzen Tag an seinem Pulte und schrieb Briefe; He stood on the mountain, looking down into the valley = Er stand auf dem Berge und sah ins Thal hinunter." This usage is in strict accord with that of Early West Saxon.

No specific statement is made as to the governing power of the present participle when used appositively. But, from § 124, 4b-c above quoted, we learn that the present appositive participle seldom governs an object in New High-German, the participle with an object usually being attributive.

As to the past participle, von Jagemann has this to say (§ 126): "Although past participles are more frequently used in German to express adverbial relations than present participles, yet they cannot be used with the same freedom as in English, and it will often seem best to make substitutions for them similar to those just indicated for present participles."

4. Old Saxon.

In Old Saxon (cf. Behaghel, and Pratje, §§ 156, 159) we again meet with the adverbial participle denoting manner
(sorgondi, gornondi, grotandi, etc.), but not means. The only instances of the temporal participle are with slapandi and libbiandi. The other adverbial uses are unrepresented (cf. Behaghel, § 300). The adjectival (relative) use is commoner with the preterite than with the present. The co-ordinate participle is unknown; for the participles cited by Behaghel in § 300, B., are either predicative or modal.

Examples (all from the Heliand as given by Pratje):—(1) Adjectival (relative): 3391: huo ik hier brimmundi thrauerc tholon; 2776: that man iro Johannes . . . hobid gari alosit fan is lichamen; (2) Adverbial: Temporal: 1013: that gi so libbecandi thena landes uuard selvon gisahon; 701: sagda im an suefna slapandion on naht;—modal: 4588: thuq bigan ther o erlo gihuilic te oØremo . . . sorgondi gisihan; 4071: griot gornondi; 2996: gruotta ina grotandi; etc. Pratje (§ 155. 2) considers uuillaadi an adverb in 1965: thoh hie . . . manno huilicon uuillaadi forgere uuatares drincan.

II.

Despite the professed incompleteness of the preceding presentation of the uses of the appositive participle in the Germanic languages exclusive of English, I believe it warrants us in drawing certain general conclusions concerning the origin of the appositive participle in the Germanic languages, as follows:—

1. The adverbial participle denoting manner and the adjectival (relative) past participle are most probably native to the Germanic languages. Perhaps, too, the adjectival and the temporal uses with words like be, live, and sleep are native.

2. All other uses of the appositive participle, whether present or past, are probably of Greek or Latin origin.

3. That the appositive use of the present participle having an object is derived from the Greek and the Latin is highly probable. True, the appositive participle in Ulfilas and in Tatian governs an object with extraordinary frequency; but
I believe that a comparison of the examples with the originals would show that in almost every case the construction is in direct imitation of the Greek and the Latin. Neither Gering nor Mourek cites all the examples of the participle with an object; Mourek does not give the Latin original along with the Old High German; and I have not made an exhaustive comparison in either case. But the slight study I have given forces me to the above conclusion. I find, for instance, that out of 151 present participles with a direct object in the Gothic Mark 139 correspond to Greek participles with objects; and that in most of the twelve exceptional cases the participle translates a Greek participle elsewhere in Mark. Mourek cites 140 examples of quedenti in Tatian; and, on turning to the Latin, I find that in 137 of these instances the Old High German participle is a direct translation of diceus. More than this, not a few of the Greek participles with an object that are cited by Gering (pp. 313 ff., 399 ff.) are turned by a finite verb, whereas the whole number of Greek verbs turned by Gothic participles is very small. In the more original Old High German texts, a present participle with an object is almost unknown. Of the appositive participles (present) cited from Otfrid by Erdmann only three have an object (singenti, r. 12. 22; hel-senti, r. 11. 46; èventi, r. 5. 50). With the present appositive participles cited from Isidor by Rannow, an object occurs only four times, each time the participle of the verb quedan; in two of these instances in direct translation of the Latin diceus, and in the other two without any corresponding participle in the Latin. More than this, eighteen times Isidor translated a Latin participle having an object by a finite verb (co-ordinated nine and subordinated nine), nine of these being forms of diceus.—In Middle High German, too, an object is seldom found. Barz cites only three examples from Iwein and the Nibelungenlied (Nib. 2292: gie Woffhart . . . howecende die Guntheres man; Iw. 531: daz ich swochende rite einen man; Iw. 4163: die reit ich swochende), and these are in connection
with a verb of motion, and waver between the predicative and the appositive use.—The comparative infrequency of the present participle with an object in New High German is known to all.—As for Old Saxon, not one of the genuine appositive participles cited by Pratje has an object.

III.

The other Germanic languages employed about the same substitutes for the Greek and Latin appositive participle as did Anglo-Saxon; hence this topic may be treated with great brevity.

1. The Co-ordinated Finite Verb.

Of the co-ordinated finite verb, Gering (p. 399 f.) cites about twenty-five examples from Ulfilas, such as Mk. 5. 41: κρατήσας τῆς χειρός τοῦ παιδίου θέει = fairgraip bi handau jata barn qafuh; J. 18. 22: ἔδοκεν πάτισμα . . . εἰπόν = gaf slah . . . qafuh; etc.—This translation is common in Old High German, also, ten examples occurring in Isidor (Rannow, p. 99 f.): 39. 26: etiam locus ipse coruscans miraculis . . . ad se omnem contrahat mundum = ioh anh dhin selba stat chisheinit . . . ioh zi immu chidhinsit allan mittingart; 4. 33: respondens . . . ait = antuurla . . . quad; etc.

2. The Subordinated Finite Verb.

For the dependent clause as a translation of the Greek and Latin appositive participle in the other Germanic languages, see Gering, p. 395 ff.; Rannow, p. 100.

As to Gothic, Gering gives but two or three examples of this locution in his treatment of the appositive participle (J. 13. 30: λαβῶν . . . ἐξῆλθεν = bipe andnum jana hlaib jains, suns galaip ut; Philip. 1. 27); but, as already stated, Gering limits the term appositive to the "adverbial" uses of the participle, and excludes therefrom the "adjectival," unwisely considering all the latter "attributive." Many of his attributive parti-
ciples are, according to our definition, appositive; and in not a few of these examples, as Gering states (p. 313), the Greek participle is translated by a Gothic subordinated finite verb introduced by a relative pronoun, as in: *Mat. 6. 4, 6. 18: ό πατήρ σου ὁ βλέπων ἐν τῷ κρυπτῷ = atta peins saei saihiwif in fulhnsja; Eph. 1. 3: θεὸς ... ὁ εὐλογήσας ἡμᾶς = guf ... izei gaprjupida uns; etc., etc. (about fifty examples in all). Moreover, as Gering tells us (p. 317 ff.), the Greek substantivized participle is often turned by a Gothic dependent clause. In reality, then, the translation of a Greek appositive participle (especially in its adjectival use) by a subordinated finite verb is very common in Gothic.

In Old High German, also, the dependent finite verb often translates a Latin appositive participle. Rannow (p. 100) cites ten examples from Isidor; of which I quote two only: 19. 14: secundum Moysi sententiam dicentis = after Moyses quhidim, dhav ir qahad; 21. 16: sed semetipsum exinanivit formam servi accipiens = oh ir sih selbun aridalida, dhuo ir scalches chiliihnissa infene.

3. The Prepositional Phrase.

Rannow (p. 102) cites one instance of this construction in Isidor: 19. 26: incarnatus et homo factus est = in fleisches liihheman uuordan; which should be compared with Bede2 239. 18: Cristus incarnatus = 310. 26: in menniscum lichoman.

4. The Infinitive.

Gering (p. 397) cites one example from the Gothic: *Mk. 10. 46: ἐκάθητο παρά τὴν ὅδον προσαντόν = sat faur wig du aihtron, but the Greek participle here is better considered predicative.

5. The Adverb.

Four examples of this locution occur in Gothic (Gering, p. 306): 2 Cor. 13. 2, 10: ἀπόν γράφω = aljaphro melja; Phil. 1. 25, 27.

This substitution is very common in Gothic (Gering, p. 301 f.): 

-Mk. 6. 9: \( \nu \n
CHAPTER VI.

THE ANGLO-SAXON APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE AS A NORM OF STYLE.

In my dissertation on The Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon a chapter is given to "The Absolute Participle as a Norm of Style," which is based on Professor Gildersleeve's essay "On the Stylistic Effect of the Greek Participle." In that chapter is discussed the stylistic effect not only of the absolute participle, but also, incidentally, of the appositive participle. I need not, therefore, detail here the theory there laid down, the more so that nothing has occurred to make me change the view then expressed. Since, however, this study may come into the hands of some to whom the earlier paper is not accessible, I shall briefly state the theory there given, and add such comments and illustrations as may seem called for by the present detailed investigation of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon.

The theory as to the stylistic effect of the absolute participle in Anglo-Saxon was summarized in these words (p. 52): "The stylistic effect of the absolute participle in Anglo-Saxon was much the same as in the classical languages: it gave movement to the sentence; it made possible flexibility and compactness. But, owing to the artificial position of the absolute construction in Anglo-Saxon, its stylistic value was reduced to a minimum, was indeed scarcely felt at all. The absolute participle rejected as an instrument of style, the Anglo-Saxon had no adequate substitute therefor. The two commonest substitutes, the dependent sentence and the coordinate clause, as used in Anglo-Saxon, became unwieldy and monotonous. Brevity and compactness were impossible; the sentence was slow in movement and somewhat cumber-
some. The language stood in sore need of a more flexible instrument for the notation of subordinate conceptions, of such an instrument as the absolute dative seemed capable of becoming but never became."

In the light of the foregoing history of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon, does this theory as to the stylistic effect of the absolute participle apply likewise to the appositive participle? Was the appositive participle as artificial a construction as the absolute participle? or was it more or less naturalized, if not native, in Anglo-Saxon?

Undoubtedly the stylistic effect of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon is to give the sentence movement, flexibility, and compactness; and it does this to a somewhat greater degree, I think, than could an equal number of absolute participles. To test this statement one need only compare a half dozen pages of Alfred, in which, as we have seen, the appositive participle (especially in certain uses) is rare, with the same number of ÆElfric's, which are strewn therewith. The slowness and the clumsiness of the former are not more patent than the rapidity, the flexibility, and the grace of the latter. Space does not allow quotations, nor are they necessary.

But the above statement is with reference to the appositive participle as a whole, whereas in Anglo-Saxon, as we have learned, the appositive participle has three sharply differentiated uses. Let us look at each for a moment by itself.

In its adjectival use, the appositive participle contributes not only to rapidity and flexibility but also to picturesqueness. The two former effects were attained in both prose and poetry; the last, as a rule, in poetry only; and all three to a greater or less degree in all stages of the Anglo-Saxon period, at least so far as the preterite participle was concerned. For the adjectival use of the present participle the Anglo-Saxon went to the Latin, though not until the Late West Saxon period. What a boon this borrowing was is clearly revealed by a comparison of Alfred with ÆElfric or with the Gospels; or, to give a more modern illustration, by comparing modern English with New High German, as,
for instance, in the examples quoted from von Jagemann in chapter v.

Of the adverbial uses, the Anglo-Saxon at the outset wielded with skill only that denoting manner, as in *swigende eaw*, etc. How poor he was as compared with us may be readily realized if we suppose the modern Englishman deprived, as is the modern German, of the ability to express means, time, cause, concession, etc., by the appositive participle. That was the situation of the Early West Saxon; but, thanks to Ælfric and the translators of the *Gospels*, Anglo-Saxon borrowed from the Latin what was so sadly needed; and Ælfric’s pages run as smoothly as do those of a modern Englishman. The fact, however, that these newly introduced uses of the adverbial appositive participle are so rare in the latter part of the *Chronicle* and in Wulfstan, leaves it doubtful whether the wisdom of Ælfric’s adoption received as immediate recognition as it deserved; though the non-use in the former may be due to the fact that it professes to be merely a bald record of facts. It seems probable, nevertheless, that these uses did not become normal for English until after the close of the Anglo-Saxon period, largely perhaps through the Anglo-Saxon and Middle English translations of the Bible, supplemented by French influence.

The Anglo-Saxon stood in greater need, I think, of the co-ordinate participle than of the adverbial (exclusive of that denoting manner); and Alfred’s persistent refusal to use it accounts in a large measure for the monotony of his style. Again Ælfric and the translators of the *Gospels*, discerning the need, borrowed from the Latin, this time the co-ordinate participle, and thereby gave to English a construction that, judged from the standpoint of style, was of immense value. Here, also, the difference between Alfred and Ælfric is the difference between modern English and modern German, happily illustrated in the examples cited from von Jagemann above (chapter v). A third time Ælfric’s lead was coldly followed by his immediate successors (Wulfstan and the author(s) of the later *Chronicle*),
and the construction hardly became fixed until the Middle English period, again through the help of the biblical translations. The foregoing applies chiefly to the present participle; the preterite participle, being inherently unsuited to the co-ordinate use, is as rare in Ælfric as in modern English.

The chief shortcoming, however, of the Anglo-Saxon appositive participle was, I take it, that in no one of the three uses did the present participle originally have the power of governing an object in construction. The introduction of this use, from the Latin, by Ælfric and the Late West Saxon translators constitutes, to my mind, their chief contribution to English style; for, with the possible exception of the infinitive and the modern gerund, no single construction has contributed so much to the compactness and the flexibility of the modern English sentence. Here, too, the innovation was tardily accepted, being seldom resorted to by Wulfstan or by the author of the Peterborough Chronicle. The general adoption of the construction in English was largely due to the influence of the biblical translations. Finally, the difference between Alfred and Ælfric is once more paralleled in that between modern English and modern German.

The Anglo-Saxon substitutes for the appositive participle call for only brief comment. The most frequent substitute, the co-ordinated finite verb, does well enough for the co-ordinate participle, but for no other, since it ignores shades of meaning. The next most common, the subordinated finite verb, is ill fitted to take the place of the co-ordinate participle, since it unduly subordinates the idea of the participle to that of the principal verb; but it is an excellent substitute for the adjectival and the adverbial participle, and is often so used not only in Anglo-Saxon but also in modern English and in the other Germanic languages. Undoubtedly, however, the appositive participle is a more flexible instrument for the denotation of subordinate ideas than is the dependent finite verb; witness the difference in this regard between modern English and modern German.
CHAPTER VII.

RESULTS.

The following are in brief the results that I believe to be established by this investigation:—

1. In Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle occurs oftenest in the nominative case, occasionally in the accusative and the dative, rarely in the genitive.

2. In Anglo-Saxon, especially in Late West Saxon and in the poems, the appositive participle is often not inflected, much oftener indeed than has hitherto been supposed. For details see p. 150 ff.

3. When inflected, the appositive participle almost invariably follows the strong declension.

4. As a rule, the appositive participle follows its principal, though occasionally (about 100 times in all) it precedes.

5. The uses of the appositive participle are three-fold:—
   (1) Adjectival, in which the participle is equivalent to a dependent adjectival (relative) clause.
   (2) Adverbial, in which the participle is equivalent to a dependent adverbial (conjunctive) clause; subdivided into (a) modal (manner and means), (b) temporal, (c) causal, (d) final, (e) concessive, and (f) conditional clauses. Some participles denoting manner, however, are equivalent, not to dependent adverbial clauses, but to simple adverbs.
   (3) Co-ordinate, in which the participle is substantially equivalent to an independent clause; subdivided into (a) the "circumstantial" participle in the narrower sense, which merely denotes an accompanying circumstance; and (b) the
"iterating" participle, which simply repeats the idea of the chief verb.

6. As to the origin of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon, in some uses it is (A) native and in others (B) foreign (Latin).

A. Native.

(1) In the following uses the appositive participle appears to be a native English idiom:

(a) The adjectival use of the preterite participle and, perhaps, of a few slightly verbal present participles like living, lying (liegende), etc.

(b) The modal use of the present and of the preterite participle when each denotes manner.

(c) Perhaps the temporal use in a few present participles of slight verbal force like being, living, and sleeping.

(2) The grounds for the statements in (1) are as follows:

(a) In the uses there specified the appositive participle is found in Early West Saxon. (b) It occurs, also, in Late West Saxon, in the more original prose (the Chronicle, the Laws, and Wulfstan), and in the poems not known to be based on Latin originals as well as in those believed to be translations. (c) In a number of instances in the translations, the Old English participle does not correspond to an appositive participle in the Latin original, but to various other constructions (see Tables at end of Chapter III). (d) In these uses the appositive participle is common in the other Teutonic languages.

B. Foreign (Latin).

(3) In the uses named below, on the contrary, the appositive participle is not a native English construction, but is borrowed from the Latin:

(a) The adjectival use of the present participle except in a few that have but little verbal force like living and lying.
(b) The modal use of the present and of the preterite participle when each denotes means.

(c) The temporal use of the participle except in a few slightly verbal present participles like *being, living,* and *sleeping.*

(d) The causal use of the present and of the preterite participle, though the latter may in part be an extension of the adjectival preterite participle.

(e) The final use of the participle, though this may in a slight degree be due to the frequent predicative use of the present participle after verbs of motion in Anglo-Saxon.

(f) The concessive use of the participle.

(g) The conditional use of the participle.

(h) The co-ordinate use of the participle.

(i) The present participle (whether adjectival, adverbial, or co-ordinate) when it governs an object in construction.

(4) The statements of (3) are believed to be substantiated by the following considerations: (a) The specified uses of the appositive participle are practically unknown in Early West Saxon; and, in the few instances in which they do occur, they are usually in direct translation of a Latin appositive participle. (b) In hundreds of instances Alfred expressly avoided the constructions, although they occurred on every page of his Latin originals. (c) These uses are very rare in the more original prose (the *Chronicle,* the *Laws,* and Wulfstan), and in almost every instance have been traced to a direct or indirect Latin prototype. (d) They are very rare, too, in Anglo-Saxon poetry, and are found almost exclusively in the poems known to rest on Latin originals. (e) They seldom occur in the other Germanic languages except in the more slavish translations. (f) They are very common, on the other hand, in the later and closer Anglo-Saxon translations (*Ælfric,* the *Gospels,* and *Benet*).—The cogency of these arguments varies somewhat with respect to the several uses; concerning which see the detailed treatment in Chapter III.

(5) From the above statements ((1)–(4)) as to the different origin of the several uses of the appositive participle we draw
this general conclusion: Anglo-Saxon was favorable to the appositive participle with pronounced adjectival (descriptive) force, but was unfavorable to the appositive participle with strong verbal (assertive) force.

7. Originally in Anglo-Saxon, the present appositive participle did not have the power of governing a direct object in construction. All present participles with a direct object are due to Latin influence.

8. Nor did the preterite appositive participle have the power of governing an accusative of the direct object. Only one example occurs in the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature, and that is in imitation of the Latin original.

9. The Anglo-Saxon substitutes for the appositive participle were:—

(1) Most frequently a co-ordinated finite verb.
(2) Somewhat less frequently a subordinated finite verb.
(3) Not infrequently a prepositional phrase.
(4) Occasionally a verb in the infinitive mood, both inflected and uninflected.
(5) Rarely an attributive participle.
(6) In a few instances an absolute participle.
(7) Occasionally an adverb.
(8) Rarely an adjective.
(9) Very rarely a substantive.

10. Although my treatment of the appositive participle in the other Germanic languages is professedly not exhaustive, it seems to make probable the following conclusions:—

(1) The uses of the appositive participle in the other Teutonic languages are on the whole substantially the same as in Anglo-Saxon, but with considerable variation in the different languages and authors. Ulfilas and Tatian, for instance, are much more addicted to the appositive participle, especially that with verbal force, than are any of the Anglo-Saxon writers except the author of *Benedict*, which is a gloss.
(2) In the other Teutonic languages as in Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle is of two-fold origin. The adverbial participle denoting manner, the adjectival (relative) past participle, the adjectival present and the temporal participle in such verbs as be, live, and sleep, are perhaps native. In all other uses the appositive participle, whether present or past, is probably of Greek (Ulfilas) or Latin origin, though in one or two of these functions, as in Anglo-Saxon, the appositive participle may in part be an extension of the attributive or the predicative use of the participle. The present appositive participle with an object in construction seems to be of wholly foreign origin.

(3) The substitutes for the appositive participle are about the same in the other Germanic Languages as in Anglo-Saxon.

11. As for its stylistic effect, in Anglo-Saxon as in the classical languages the appositive participle conduces to rapidity, compactness, and flexibility. In the adjectival use of the preterite participle and in the adverbial use of the present and of the preterite denoting manner, this is more or less exemplified in all periods of Anglo-Saxon; and in the poetry the participle contributes, also, to picturesqueness. The other uses of the appositive participle were practically ignored by the Early West Saxons, and to this fact are largely due the unwieldiness and the monotony of Alfred’s style. Ælfric and the translators of the Gospels, on the other hand, adopted these uses from the Latin, and handled the same almost as skillfully as do modern Englishmen; whence results in great measure the excellence of Ælfric’s style in point of flexibility and grace. But these innovations were looked upon coldly by Ælfric’s immediate successors (Wulfstan and the author of the Peterborough Chronicle), and scarcely became thoroughly naturalized during the Anglo-Saxon period.

Morgan Callaway, Jr.
ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.

Originally not intending to discuss the inflection of the appositive participle, I did not in my first draft jot down all the peculiar forms observed. After deciding to treat the subject, I thought that the Introduction could be held in type until the final proving and printing of the Statistics. But, as their bulk made this impossible, the following additions and corrections are called for in the section of the Introduction (iv) dealing with the inflection of the appositive participle:—

The Present Participle.

NS. (p. 150):—L. 7 from below: change three to two, and strike out Ælfr. L. S. 282. 5; for, after the preparation of the Statistics, I received vol. iv of Skeat's edition of this work, in the "Errata" of which he corrects feohtend to feohtende. This, of course, changes feohtend in my Statistics (p. 197, l. 27).

L. 3 from below: change four to five, and add 104. 16 after 95. 11.

L. 1 from below: to exceptions add -ande: Benet¹ 68. 1; -ynde: Mat.¹ 9. 29.

ASM. (p. 151, l. 6):—Ælfr. L. S. 78. 489 has -ande, which reduces the number of -ende by one.

N. and A. PMFN. (p. 151, l. 10): to the exceptions add: (1) masculine: -ande: Benet¹ 55. 4, Greg.¹ 123. 16; -onde: Bede¹ 72. 9, Bened. 9. 7; -ynde: Mat.¹ 9. 27, 31; (2) neuter: -ande: Ælfr. L. S. 224. 86.

The Preterite Participle.

NSM. (p. 151, l. 16):—Benet¹ 100. 3 has benaehS for benaeh; and Chron. 1048 E has unsweian.
DSMN. (p. 151, l. 22):—insert -on after -an.

ASM. (p. 151, l. 6 from below):—to the inflectional ending add -um for -an, weak (Bede¹ 130. 33), and see p. 153, where the example is quoted in full.

ASN. (p. 152, l. 1):—Mat.¹ 11. 7 has -yd instead of -ed.

NPM. (p. 152, l. 2):—Laws (Wilhtr., c. 4) has -yne instead of -ene; and Benet¹ 113. 9 has astrehd for astreht.

NAPN. (p. 152, l. 7):—to the inflectional endings add -u (Greg.¹ 245. 8ᵃᵇ), in which the participles are probably accusatives rather than nominatives (as given on p. 173, l. 10). Beow. 3049 has Surhetone instead of Surhetene.

GP. (p. 152, l. 10):—to the exception add geferede: Elnac 992.

DPM. (p. 152, l. 11):—to the inflectional ending add -e: ÆElfr. Hept. (Judges 16. 7).

On p. 203, ll. 8, 18, and 25, strike out unenœ.

The following typographical errors should be noted:—
P. 146, l. 26: change dash to hyphen.
P. 147, l. 2: for rechfertigen read rechfertigen.
P. 149, l. 16: for Indo-Germanic read Indo-Germanic.
P. 180, l. 23: for unbefohtene read unbefohtene.
P. 181, l. 11: for Singe read Singe.
P. 185, l. 26: for geondead = angaritia: 7. 54 read geneadod = 54. 7: angariati.
P. 288, l. 12: for ewedende read ewësende.

M. C., Jr.

A NOTE OF Thanks.

I wish heartily to thank my colleagues in the School of English, Drs. Killis Campbell and Pierce Butler, and my honored teacher, Professor James W. Bright, for gracious help in the issuing of this monograph. Each of the three has kindly assisted in reading the proof, and has offered valuable suggestions for the betterment of my study.

M. C., Jr.
BIBLIOGRAPHY.

I. Texts Read.

a. Anglo-Saxon.


Ælf. Hept. = ib.


Ælf. L. S. = Skeat, Ælfric's Lives of Saints, E. E. T. S., nos. 76, 82, 94, London, 1881, 1885, 1890. Vol. IX (1900) was received too late to be read for this study. Vols. i and ii are cited simply by page and line; vol. iii, by number of homily and of line.


Boeth. 1 = Sedgefield, King Alfred's Old English Version of Boethius De Consolatione Philosophiae, Oxford, 1899. [For the prose only; the Metres are taken from Grein-Wülker's Bibl. der ags. Poesie.]

Christ = Albert S. Cook, The Christ of Cynewulf, Boston, 1900.


Poems = Grein-Wülker's Bibliothek der engl. Poesie, 3 vols., Kassel, 1881-1889. [For all the poems except Cynewulf's Christ, which see above.]

Ps. Th. = Thorpe, Libri Psalmorum Versio antiqua Latina cum Paraphrasi Anglo-Saxonica, Oxonii, 1835. [For the prose psalms only; the poetical ones are cited from Grein-Wülker.]


b. Latin.


Benet. = Latin in Benet. 1


Hept. = Latin Heptateuch, etc., given in Ælf. Hept., which see.

Oros. = Latin in Oros. 1

Ps. Th. = Latin in Ps. Th. 1 [The Introductions are taken from Bruce in II.]

II. Works Cited.

Bartlett, Helen: The Metrical Division of the Paris Psalter, Baltimore, 1890.


Behaghel, O.: Die Syntax des Helian, Wien, 1897.


THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 357

Conradi, B.: Darstellung der Syntax in Cynewulf's Juliana, Halle, 1886.
Einenkel, E.: Streifzüge durch die Mittelengl. Syntax, Münster, 1887.
Erdmann, O.: Untersuchungen über die Syntax der Sprache Offrids, Halle, 1874.
Erdmann, O.: Grundzüge der Deutschen Syntax, i, Stuttgart, 1886; ii, by Erdmann and Mensing, 1898.
Flamme, J.: Syntax der Blickling Homilies, Bonn, 1885.
Gollancz, I.: Cynewulf’s Christ, London, 1892.
Helm, F.: *Quaestiones Syntaxicae de Participiorum Usu Tacitino Velleiano Sallustiano*, 1879.
Kent, C. W.: *Elene*, Boston, 1889.
Kinnamon, J. P.: *A Study of Wulfstan’s Homilies: Their Style and Sources*, Baltimore, 1897.
Lücke, O.: *Absolute Participia im Gotischen u. ihr Verhältn. zum Gr. Original*, Magdeburg, 1876.
Land, G. F. V.: *Oldnordisk Ordlaufsordning*, Kopenhagen, 1862.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 359


Ott, J. H.: über die Quellen der Heiligenleben in Ælfrie's Lives of Saints, i, Halle, 1892.


Schrader, B.: Studien zur Ælfrieschen Syntax, Jena, 1887.


Schwerdtfeger, G.: Das Schwache Verbun in Ælfries Hominien, Marburg, 1890.


Tammelin, E. J.: De Participis Priscae Latinulae Questiones Syntacticae, Helsingfors, 1889.
Thomas, C.: A Practical German Grammar, New York, 1895 (?)
Torp: see Falk.
Von Jageman, H. C. G.: Elements of German Syntax, New York, 1892.
Wunderlich, H.: Beiträge zur Syntax des Notker'schen Boethius, Berlin, 1883 (?)